Psych
H7643L

SECOND SERIES

INCIDENTS IN MY LIFE

BY

D. D. HOME

"Instead of being a superstition itself, as they may be disposed to think it, they would find it the explanation and the extinguisher of all superstition."—DR. R. CHAMBERS.



396506
14.9.71

NEW YORK
HOLT & WILLIAMS
1872

Digitized by Microsoft®

Entered according to Act of Congress, in the year 1872, by
DANIEL DOUGLAS HOME,
In the office of the Librarian of Congress, at Washington.

Digitized by Microsoft®

CONTENTS.

	Page
Preface	vii
Introduction	1
CHAPTER I.	
Reviews and Replies.—Letter to "Times"	21
CHAPTER II.	
Sir David Brewster.—Lord Brougham.—Letters and Testimony.—Dr. Elliottson.—Prophetic Incidents	44
CHAPTER III.	
Expulsion from Rome.—Discussion in House of Commons	70
CHAPTER IV.	
Sludge, the Medium.—Mr. Robert Browning.—Fancy Portraits	95
CHAPTER V.	
Nice, America, Russia.—The Double Séances in London	112
CHAPTER VI.	
Lecture.—Notice in "Star."—Falsehoods in "All the Year Round"	123
CHAPTER VII.	
Spiritual Athenæum.—Identity.—Guardians of Strength.—Spirit Mesmerism	140
CHAPTER VIII.	
New Manifestations.—Elongation.—Voices.—Perfumes	156
CHAPTER IX.	
Elongation and Compression.—Handling of Fire	175
CHANCERY SUIT.	
Mrs. Lyon's Affidavit in support of the Bill	193
My Answer to the Suit	209
Mr. W. M. Wilkinson's Answer to the Suit	309

Digitized by Microsoft®

Digitized by Microsoft®

PREFACE.

ABOUT nine years since I presented to the public a volume entitled "Incidents of my Life," the first edition of which was speedily exhausted, and a second was issued in 1863. During the years that have since elapsed, although many attacks have been made upon me, and upon the truths of Spiritualism, its opponents have not succeeded in producing one word of evidence to discredit the truth of my statements, which have remained uncontradicted. Meantime the truths of Spiritualism have become more widely known, and the subject has been forced upon public attention in a remarkable manner. This was especially the case in the years 1867, 1868, in consequence of the suit "Lyon *v.* Home," which most probably was the indirect cause of the examination into Spiritualism by the Committee of the Dialectical Society, whose report has recently been published. Coincident with and subsequent to their examination, a series of investigations was carried on in my presence, by Lord Adare, now Earl of Dunraven, an

Digitized by Microsoft®

account of which has been privately printed; an examination, especially scientific in its character, was also conducted by Professor Crookes, who has published his conclusions in the "Journal of Science."

I now present the public with the second volume of "Incidents of my Life," which continues my narrative to the period of the commencement of the Chancery suit. In the third volume, which I expect to issue in June next, I purpose to complete the account of the suit and give the subsequent investigations above alluded to.

D. D. H.

London, *November*, 1871.

Digitized by Microsoft®

INTRODUCTION.

THE following introductory remarks which I here republish, were written for my first volume, by the late Dr. Robert Chambers, of Edinburgh, who also contributed to it the last chapter of the appendix.

Mr. Home's narrative is composed of particulars so much at issue with the ordinary ideas of mankind, that his friends may well feel some apology for it to be necessary. Delicate in health, extremely sensitive in spirit, of gentle and uncombative nature, coming forward with his narration for no conceivable end but to propagate a knowledge of what he regards as important truths, it seems but right that he should be spared as much as possible of the sceptical derision which such novelties are sure in greater or less degree to evoke. Hence the present introductory remarks.

Whatever be the preconceptions of the reader regarding Mr. Home, he will scarcely fail, after reading this volume, to acknowledge that the author writes as a man thoroughly in earnest, and who has himself no doubts of the phenomena which attend him. He tells how these phenomena commenced in his childhood, how they have been with him

Digitized by Microsoft ®

ever since, except during a few brief intervals; how, while bringing him public notice and some valuable friendships, they have been in some respects an inconvenience and a misfortune, and betoken conditions that do not promise length of days; all this with an unargumentative simplicity that speaks strongly of at least sincere conviction on his own part. He sustains the character of the Mystic Sensitive throughout his narration, as he has done throughout the first thirty years of his actual life, without falter or hesitation; what he was at the first he is now. It is for those who would attribute all to imposture, to show how a fictitious character can be so perfectly and so enduringly maintained.

It is also to be remarked that the facts of Mr. Home's life do not rest on his own averments alone. Their objective reality and their freedom from delusion and imposture, are certified by an immense number of persons, who are here indicated by name or otherwise. Some of these persons, and others who remain uncited, are of a character to form a strong guarantee for the truth of anything to which they might testify. It is often, indeed, remarked, as a marvel of a very suggestive kind in this our highly intellectual age, that men of knowledge and reflection, of whom so much better things might be expected, are found so weak as to be imposed upon by such transparent deception, and so foolish as to come forward and bear witness in its behalf. But of course this is not reasoning; it is only begging the question. The remark might be answered by another: it is a marvel of a highly suggestive nature, that men of critical judgment should be so far imposed upon by their self-esteem, that they can calmly set down a number of men reputedly as judicious as themselves, and whose judgment they acknowledge, as capable of seeing and hearing that which is not, and never appear to suspect that these persons have possibly some real grounds for the faith that is in them. A little modesty would evidently go a great way to solve the

Digitized by Microsoft®

difficulty which the incredulous profess to feel on this point. If they would go a little farther, and so far yield to the behests of their favourite philosophy as to inquire before pronouncing, it might so chance that the position of a believer in these phenomena would become more intelligible to them. So at least it has already happened with a vast number of persons, equally positive at starting that the whole was a delusion; and we are entitled to assume that what has been, may be again. Nay, the value of the testimony in question in a great measure arises from the very fact, that it has been extorted from the reluctant convictions of a multitude of persons, at one time wholly scornful and incredulous regarding the alleged facts.

It will be rather startling, but yet it may be very plausibly urged, that the phenomena of Mr. Home's mediumship are not opposed to the experience of mankind. On the contrary, facts of this kind have been reported as occurring in all ages; nor is it more than two centuries since they began to be doubted. Even during the two centuries of partial scepticism, they have continued to be reported as happening not less frequently than before. It may be replied, this sceptical voice has been the voice of wisdom and truth, for the first time heard in the world. Is it really so? Is it not rather a dictum expressive only of an intellectual habit—the result of the kind of studies during that time chiefly predominant? Is it not that, in an exclusive and overmastering devotion to material philosophy, men have fallen out of the habit of considering the spiritual part of the world, retaining little more than a nominal faith even in those spiritual things which their religious creed avouches? Clearly the mere fact of two centuries of partial scepticism does not go for much. But then this enlightened spirit has penetrated the mystery in so many cases, and shown it to be based in nothing but vulgar deception. Has it really done so? Has it not simply flattered itself with illusive compliments to its

Digitized by Microsoft®

own penetration? One noted instance of a person professedly affected as Mr. Home has been, was Anne Parsons, a little girl living in Cock Lane, in the City of London, in 1762. If there is any case in which detection of imposture is triumphantly and unchallengedly assumed, it is that of the famous Cock Lane Ghost. Mark the facts of the detection. Knockings and scratchings were for a couple of years heard in connection with little Anne Parsons, and at length a mode of conversation with the unseen agent was hit upon. The so-called ghost averred that a woman who recently lived in Parsons' house, and was since dead, had been murdered by her quasi-husband, a Mr. Kent. It was what Mr. Home would have called a lying spirit. The girl being taken to the house of Mr. Alrich, a clergyman, a party was formed to put to the test a promise of the "ghost," that it would knock upon the coffin of the deceased in a vault of St. John's, Clerkenwell, at a certain hour in the evening. No knocks occurred—lying spirit again. Then came the grand stroke in the detection. The girl was taken into a stranger's house, put into a bed hung clear of the floor, and watched for two nights, during which no noises were heard. A result, which might be owing merely to the deranged conditions, was held by the sapient committee of investigation as clear proof of imposture; but they were yet to have evidence more positive. Having become impatient with the child, they told her on the third night, that if the knockings were not heard that night, she and her parents would be taken to Newgate! Under this threat, the child took a board into bed with her, was seen to do so, (why was such a thing never seen before?) and soon sounds admitted to be different from what happened before, were heard. The bed was then searched, the board found, and the girl proclaimed as a proved impostor. In this clumsy, foolish, and utterly unsatisfactory manner, was the Cock Lane Ghost "detected." On no other grounds has the fallacy of the case become the proverb it now is. Now, if such be the

Digitized by Microsoft®

easy terms on which scepticism assumes its greatest triumphs, what importance are we to attach to its pronouncements on this subject in instances less important, and where it has put forth (as is the general case) less of its strength? Are they worth the air they cost to make them audible?

There is surely, after all, nothing like a serious improbability in the spiritual phenomena. We, every hour of our lives, have occasion to acknowledge that there is a spirit, an immortal something, in man; we equally believe that this spirit, which does such wonderful things on earth, will survive in some other sphere of existence, and not in a wholly inactive state. Is there anything *à priori* unlikely in the idea that the spirit, which parts with so much that is dear to it here, may linger in the scenes of its earthly pilgrimage, and desire to hold intercourse with those remaining behind? On the contrary, it seems rather likely that the "animula vagula, blandula," will hover about its old loves, and where conditions permit or are favourable, will contrive to make itself again seen or at least heard. It may be a mere effort of the original social nature; or it may result from a benevolent anxiety for the welfare of individuals—to inform, to guide, and protect them; or it may be a needful part of the frame of things in which humanity is established on earth—something required to keep us in mind of that world beyond the screen, out of which we have come, and to which we are to return. It has often, indeed, been urged that the spiritual phenomena generally are of a frivolous and useless character, doing little more than show that Spiritualism is a truth. But spiritualists say, on the other hand, that experimenters generally set about their business in a frivolous spirit, and only get communications from shades of their own character. It will be found that, in the case of Mr. Home, who is a man of a religious turn of mind, pure-hearted and unworldly, the phenomena are of an elevated character, tending to heal

Digitized by Microsoft®

sickness, to smooth away sorrow, and to chasten and exalt the minds of the living. There is, indeed, every reason to believe that if spiritual communications were now sought in a suitable frame of mind, results in the highest style of sanctitude, rivalling those of the most famous devotees, might be obtained. Already, Spiritualism, conducted as it usually is, has had a prodigious effect throughout America, and partly in the Old World also, in redeeming multitudes from hardened atheism and materialism, proving to them, by the positive demonstration which their cast of mind requires, that there is another world—that there is a non-material form of humanity—and that many miraculous things which they have hitherto scoffed at, are true.

There remains a great stumbling-block to many, in the manner in which the communications are most frequently made. It seems below the dignity of a disembodied spirit to announce itself and speak by little pulsatory noises on a table or wainscot. It might, however, be asked if it be not a mere prejudice which leads us to expect that the spirit, on being disembodied, suddenly, and of necessity, experiences a great exaltation. Take the bulk of mankind as they are, and can we really say that there is anything derogatory to them in the supposition that, in any circumstances, they would talk by noise-signals? We must, moreover, remember that we know nothing of the conditions under which spirits can communicate. This may be the most readily available mode in most instances. Beyond doubt, in certain circumstances of difficulty, the most exalted of living persons might be glad to resort to such a mode of telegraphy. In 1823, Signor Andryane, the agent of an Italian conspiracy against Austria, was thrown into the prisons of the police at Milan. He tells us, in his very interesting Memoirs, how, being desirous of communicating with the inmate of an adjoining cell, he tapped gently on the wall, and after some time had his signal answered. "One, two, three—a pause, *a*, *b*, *c*,

Digitized by Microsoft®

—it was *c*. Still listening,—one, two, three, four,—eight blows,—it was *h*; *c. h*. Slowly, but distinctly, nine blows were given: this must mean the letter *i*, &c." After some difficulties, these two unfortunates succeeded in forming a system of communication, in the highest degree useful and consolatory to them, by raps on the wall, expressive of letters of the Italian alphabet [1]—being precisely the mode of communication so largely (though not exclusively) adopted by the spirits—the favourite subject of ridicule to those who are so unfortunate as to take only a superficial view of this subject, or so unfair as to select what, in their ignorance, they consider as the weakest point. If the disembodied find a sort of wall interposed between them and the living world with which they desire to communicate, what can be more natural than to resort to the expedient which was embraced in analogous circumstances by these two living prisoners? Short of the use of actual language written or spoken, what better possible mode of communication can be suggested?

There are two points of view in which Mr. Home's publication of his experiences appears entitled to praise as well as sympathy. Regard it simply as a curious case in pathology—for himself to describe it in detail may be considered as a useful service to mankind, just as it would be considered useful to us to obtain the self-portraiture of any other peculiar case of nervous derangement. As already stated, such cases are far from being uncommon; but the intelligence and probity required to apprehend their character truly, and describe it exactly, is rare. To the psycho-pathologist, accordingly, if he can get over the disposition to sneer and laugh, and will condescend to meet a man as honest as himself on his own grounds, this detail may serve to advance an important scientific purpose. Even more valuable is the instruction

[1] See "Memoirs of Alexander Andryane," translated by Ferdinando Prandi, 2 vols. Second Edition. Newby. London, 1848.

Digitized by Microsoft®

to be derived from it by the moralist and the philosophical historian. The past is full of such phenomena. Wrongly apprehended in the first place by their recipients, they have been made the bases of juggling arts; of childish mythologies; of superstitious religions; and the means of affecting individuals and multitudes to most mischievous and illogical conclusions in a thousand different ways. Even at the present day, accepted as confirmations of sundry doctrines and pretensions, they become the means of misleading a vast number of well-intending people. While philosophy refuses to see them in their true light, it can do nothing to abate or prevent the evil in question, for the victim knows too well that the phenomena are not, as philosophy would inculcate, unreal. Let philosophy see them as they are—a part of the universal frame of things, liable like everything else to law, and having a real bearing on the good and evil fortunes of mankind—and the weakest would henceforth be safe from all false conclusions to be deduced from them. To this good end the "candid reader" may find Mr. Home's autobiography a valuable contribution.

As an evidence of the attention of Mr. R. Chambers having been turned to this subject at an early period, I insert the following note written by him in 1855, which shows that it was not upon a short or slight acquaintance with me that he wrote the above introduction.

"Edinburgh, July 30, 1855.

"Dear Mrs. de Morgan,

"I return my warmest thanks for your truly obliging attention in sending me these additional notices. I have delayed writing on the subject for two or three days, that I might be able to say your wish regarding at least Professor Gregory, had been fulfilled. I have seen him this evening, and read your letter to him and Mrs. Gregory. It is scarcely necessary

Digitized by Microsoft®

to say that they feel deeply interested by your notes, forming as they do such satisfactory proofs.

" Professor and Mrs. Gregory had not as yet heard of Mr. Hume and his singular phenomena, and they are much interested about him. As they are to set out on Thursday for a German spa (on account of Mrs. Gregory's health), I have recommended them to try to see Hume as they pass through London. They are willing, but do not know how to proceed. At my suggestion, they are inclined to wait upon you on Friday at 12 o'clock, to see if you can give them any information on the subject, and also to converse with you about your own domestic marvels. I have no doubt you will be glad to see this most amiable and worthy professor and his lady, if it be at all convenient to you. I believe they will stay at the Euston Square Hotel; so, if you be engaged, you may give them a few lines to say so.

" There is only one other person in Scotland to whom I care to communicate these singular phenomena—a Miss Douglas, niece of the late General Sir Neil Douglas, our commander-in-chief. With ordinary people, I scarcely can open my mouth on such subjects.

" I beg to be kindly remembered to Mr. de Morgan, and am,

" Dear Mrs. de Morgan,

" Yours very respectfully,

" R. CHAMBERS.

" This letter requires no reply."

The following, which was written to me with respect to materials for my book, speaks for itself, as well as that which follows.

' 1, Doune Terrace, Edinburgh.
Dec. 22, 1859.

" MY DEAR SIR,

" I have duly received your letter of Monday, and after some little pottering, have found a book

Digitized by Microsoft®

in my library which gives the writings of Aubrey, of Martin, and of Theophilus Nisalenus, on second sight, all in one—a great convenience; so I dispatch it to you to-day by post. Thus, with Fraser's treatise formerly sent, you are now pretty complete as to Scottish materials for your proposed book. I may remark that this volume is one of a set now scarce, and therefore I hope you will excuse me asking you to take unusual care of it.

"It is interesting to hear of your interview with the venerable Lyndhurst. I hope you will be able this winter to give a few sittings to such persons and others, without injury to your health. What I have had to tell to Miss Douglas, Miss Catherine Sinclair, and Mrs. Gregory, since I came home, has interested them deeply, and they all hope that you will be in Edinburgh next year.

"Mrs. C. is much gratified to receive the kind message from your wife, and desires me to send her kind regards in return. With all good wishes, I am,

"My dear Sir,

"Yours very faithfully,

"R. CHAMBERS.

"My compliments to Mr. Cox, if you please."

"August 1, 1860.

"DEAR MR. HUME,

"The appearance of the article 'Stranger than Fiction,' in the 'Cornhill Magazine,' tempted me to trouble you with a few lines, merely to congratulate you on the good effect that may be anticipated in behalf of your personal reputation in this country. I was, I must own, scarcely prepared for so strong a demonstration from a high class periodical in favour of the subject that is stranger than fiction. So I am the more pleased to see it, and the more gratified on your account.

"I was very unlucky in the detention of my dear and

Digitized by Microsoft®

valued friend, Mr. Owen,[1] till after I had left town: but he is promising to be here about the 4th of this month, and Miss Douglas and I are looking forward with great pleasure to his visit. What of *your* proposed visit to Scotland?

"I am in expectation of being in London for some time after the autumn, when I may hope to see you and Mrs. Hume. Please, my kind compliments to her, and believe me, with all good wishes,

"Yours very sincerely,

"R. CHAMBERS.

"My ordinary address continues to be 1, Doune Terrace."

A letter from Dr. R. Chambers, to Mrs. S. C. Hall, dated Nov. 1, 1866, contains the following passage in speaking of an apparent kindness that had been bestowed on me. "Such is my opinion of him that not only do I think him deserving of it, but that he will make a good use of it. We may, I think, trust to see him propagating spiritualism from the independent point he has reached, with power only bounded by the needful regard to his health."

I append here extracts from a little brochure, by Miss Douglas, the lady who is referred to in each of the foregoing letters, with reference to which Dr. R. Chambers wrote—"These twenty-four pages, in my opinion, contain the germ of the greatest discovery, and the greatest revolution of human thought that any age of the world has witnessed."

It may indeed be conceded that on the inquiry into a future state of existence no science has yet thrown the smallest light—that natural theology has made little ad-

[1] Mr. Robert Dale Owen, author of "Footfalls on the Boundary of another World."

Digitized by Microsoft®

vance since the dawn of civilization: but it may be asked whether the time which has elapsed since that period be not too brief to compel us to despair of ultimately attaining to any knowledge of our future destinies, too brief to warrant the conclusion of the inapplicability to man's highest quest of those methods which have guided him to truth in other paths of inquiry. The idea is now arising that the cause of the undiminished darkness overhanging all that relates to a state of existence after this life, may be that the right track has never yet been entered on, that the facts really affording in this direction materials for induction have hitherto been disregarded, that they nevertheless abound, that a higher enlightenment will cause attention to be turned to them and reveal their profound significance. From sedulous observation of the spiritual phenomena in their multiform aspects, from study of the more subtle and recondite physical laws brought to bear on those phenomena, will, there is reason to believe, emerge proof of the existence within the order of nature of forces forming a link and means of intercourse between this sphere of existence and the one immediately above, through which proof may be established of the immortality of the soul. From that very quarter now most hostile to the doctrine of spiritualism may thus come demonstration of its truth: all unconsciously Science herself, it may be, has led the way to the confines of another world; ere long, we may hope, will she unbar the portals through which light from that world has hitherto struggled with fitful and refracted rays.

As to those minds disposed to make light of the religious sentiment, minds which, despite the enormous influence it has ever exercised over human affairs, despite the enduring institutions to which it has given birth, despite its universality, the outward signs of which in every land so forcibly strike the eye, from the dome which is the boast of the Eternal City, from the glittering minarets of Stamboul, from the fallen temples of a bygone

Digitized by Microsoft®

world, to the village spire and to the rude altar of uncivilized man, still see in that sentiment but a weakness of human nature—to those minds proof may be afforded that it is an essential element of man's mental constitution, often indeed misled, but tending still towards truth, having its real, its fit, its correlative objects beyond this world; and thus may the general result be that conflicting sects and schools of religious opinion, guided by one common and ever-increasing light, may by degrees lay aside their differences, and unite in one harmonious and progressive movement.

Those to whom such views may appear visionary are entreated to examine the grounds on which they rest: investigation seriously and perseveringly conducted can hardly fail to convince reflecting minds of at all events the *reality* of the phenomena called spiritual, to prove to them (in the words of a distinguished mathematician) "that they are things which cannot be taken by a rational being to be capable of explanation by imposture, coincidence, or mistake. Like Professor de Morgan, some may not indeed be able to adopt any explanation concerning them which has yet been given, but so far they will probably go with him as to recognize as their cause "some combination of will, intellect, and physical power which is not that of any of the human beings present."[1]

One cause of incredulity as to manifestations from another world, is the view (generally however much misrepresented) to which they lead of the future state; such revelations concerning it as we have from that source are

---

[1] The researches of Baron Reichenbach cannot but strike the student of spiritual phenomena. His experiments on the psycho-physico action of crystals—of the force emanating from them termed odyle on sensitives, have suggested the idea that the proneness to second sight or spontaneous clairvoyance in certain regions, in the western Highlands of Scotland for instance, may be owing to the highly crystalline formation of the rocks from which odyle must be copiously emitted.

Digitized by Microsoft®

no doubt at variance with received ideas, indicating as they do, a state similar in kind to this present life, and only a step higher in an ascending series of existences, one into which we carry our human nature, and in which progress is but gradual. This view, however little in accordance with the general conception of a future existence, derives nevertheless support from analogy, harmonising as it does with those views of physical progress opened up by geology, and by the study of organic forms from primeval times. It is agreed, as well by those who maintain that progress to be the result of distinct acts of Omnipotence, as by those who believe in a progressive principle imparted *ab origine* to the works of creation, that where in their series breaks were once supposed to occur, closer inspection has discovered links, carrying on the chain by minute degrees, to borrow the fine imagery of a distinguished naturalist "we learn from the past history of our globe that Nature has advanced with slow and stately steps, guided by the archetypal light, amidst the wreck of worlds, from the first embodiment of the vertebrate idea under its old ichthyic vestment, until it became arrayed in the glorious garb of the form of man."

The law of gradual progress thus poetically set forth by Professor Owen, and which we behold stamped through every part of this visible sphere, may well be extended to the invisible, may well exist for the individual as for the species; nor would it be less in accordance with analogy to infer that the beginning only of such progress would be slow, that the further the advance, the more ethereal the surroundings the more accelerated it would become.

The common-place character of a large portion of the spirit-communications, the extravagant character of some, cease to perplex when we come to view them as proceeding from beings lately ordinary dwellers upon earth, and retaining still their earthly dispositions and ideas. True, the difficulty remains as to why some small portion at least of these communications should not bear the im-

Digitized by Microsoft®

press of transcendent wisdom and genius; the absence from them of anything equalling, far less surpassing the highest products of the human mind, argues, it must be admitted, some hindrance to intercourse with spiritual beings of an exalted order; may we not hope to overcome it? Meantime, as a necessary consequence of the unprogressed condition of the beings from whom a large portion of the communications proceeds, many of these do but confirm the members of each sect in their own views, while some have given rise to doctrines (such as in France, that of re-incarnation) from which Spiritualists as a body recoil. We must not indeed shrink from the admission that intercourse with the invisible world has been the origin of all superstitions, and all erroneous theologies; that to it even may be due their persistence for a while after they cease to harmonise with the general spirit of the society over which they once held dominion.

To the reader familiar with spiritual phenomena it is evident even from the sneering narrative of Gibbon, that the apostacy of Julian, and his intense enthusiasm in the cause of the fallen faith, was in truth due to communication with the invisible world; spirits of departed pagans still apparently clinging to their earthly creed, seem to have impressed him powerfully, visiting him, and conversing with him in the forms of the Olympian gods; "We may learn," says Gibbon, "from his faithful friend the orator Libanius, that he lived in a perpetual intercourse with the gods and goddesses, that they descended upon earth to enjoy the conversation of their favourite hero, that they gently interrupted his slumbers by touching his hand or his hair, that they warned him of every impending danger, and conducted him by their infallible wisdom in every action of his life."

That so much that is erroneous should have been allowed to proceed from spiritual sources on the subject of the highest import, is indeed an enigma; is it how-

Digitized by Microsoft®

ever more than one among the enigmas which in our present state of knowledge appear as insolvable as they are painful, when we survey the system in which we have our being?

The claim to be set off against the admissions which have been made, is that every doctrine which has emanated from the spirit world, and has been accepted by any considerable portion of mankind, has either established a moral code where none had previously existed, or has been an improvement on the one it superseded.

If we must not shut our eyes to the dangers of communication with another sphere, on the other hand we may feel confident that with the progress of knowledge they will pass away; the amount of light which has already been thrown on the nature of spiritual communications precludes their being received henceforth with unquestioning faith, precludes therefore the risk of their giving rise to new forms of religious error; the general characteristic moreover of the higher spiritual communications of the present day is the absence of dogmatic teaching, and the assertion that it is only as we advance in virtue and in the deeper paths of knowledge that we can attain to further light in the science of things divine—to any criterion as to truth in the interpretation of revealed doctrine.

If the idea of a future life only gradually progressive, and of which the first phase will be similar in kind to life here below, does not give rise to the same emotions which in rapt moments may fill the soul in anticipation of perfect rest and felicity after the ills of earth; on the other hand it is a view more fitted perhaps to give steady every-day support, to afford until the last hour an incentive to exertion.

That "the better world," should be so unwillingly drawn near to, even in advanced years, seems a strange contradiction in human nature; may not the cause lie to

Digitized by Microsoft®

some extent in the nature of the pictures usually, so far as they go, presented of that world? The little relating to it that falls from the pulpit, is but cold and vague, based upon some few indefinite scriptural expressions, and reflecting generally the views of that class of minds in which earthly aims and joys, if not more or less associated with sin, are at all events considered incompatible with the dignity and purity of life beyond the grave.

Then again, how full of gloom is the language commonly used with respect to death; such expressions as the narrow home, the long sleep, implying as they do an intermediate state of indefinite duration, of nothingness, offer the very reverse of the picture which presents itself to the disciple of the new doctrine in connection with departure from this world; like the traveller bound to some fair region yet unknown, and

"Full of wonder, full of hope as he,"

he looks forward to the new scene as one immediately to be entered into, as one adapted to his present nature—a higher phase of the eternal life begun on earth; for there, he believes, do all human faculties find wider scope in a system purer, more refined, more plastic to progressive force, more in harmony with the ideal; there, he believes, does the Spirit of Truth guide her followers with a brighter torch, the Spirit of Beauty mould all things nearer to the archetypal forms; there shall we taste in higher perfection all that here fires or charms the mind; there the tender ties and sweet affections of our nature, not losing their special character will become only deeper and more intense; there from the supreme source will a more radiant light stream down.

The frame of mind to which Spiritualism leads is well fitted to enable us to remain calm under the attacks of its opponents; to smile patiently while sensible people, in entire ignorance of the subject, pronounce it imposture, while religious people condemn it as impious, while some

Digitized by Microsoft ®

silver-tongued sciolist utters to a tittering and applauding audience ridicule of nature's deepest and most wondrous laws.

Again we are supported when we remember that the new doctrine is but undergoing what every great new idea, what every great discovery, has had to undergo ere it triumphed—scorn, derision, misrepresentation; error is persistive, prejudice hard to be overcome, the boast of Cæsar has never been for Truth.

The non-arbitrary character of the spiritual phenomena, their subjection to law, have in these pages been urged; and it may indeed be affirmed that independently of spiritual declarations there is no uncertain ground for the inference that they are part of the order of Nature, for as all scientific research concurs in proving the accidental or anomalous to have no existence in the visible universe, so, guided by analogy, may we conclude that the same principle of order is extended to that more mysterious region whence these phenomena proceed; and intimately connected as they obviously are with subtle physical and physiological conditions belonging to this sphere, of a nature not more apparently insolvable than were at one time other problems which have received solution, the conclusion is warranted that they are not beyond the boundary of investigation, and that their laws will be ultimately disclosed.

In a striking passage of his Essays the late Mr. Baden Powell seems to glance at the spiritual manifestations then just beginning to attract attention. In the present state of science, he remarks, "of all subjects that on which we know least is perhaps the connexion of our bodily and mental nature, the action of the one on the other, and all the vast range of sensations, sympathies, and influences, in which those affections are displayed, and of which we have sometimes such extraordinary manifestations in peculiar states of excited cerebral or nervous action, som-

Digitized by Microsoft®

nambulism, spectral impressions, the phenomena of suspended animation, double consciousness, and the like. In such cases science has not yet advanced to any generalisations; results only are presented which have not as yet been traced to laws; yet no inductive inquirer for a moment doubts that these classes of phenomena are all really connected by some great principle of order."

"If, then, *some peculiar manifestations* should appear of a more extraordinary character, still less apparently reducible to any known principles, it could not be doubted by any philosophic mind that they were in reality harmonious and conspiring parts of some higher series of causes as yet undiscovered. The most formidable outstanding apparent anomalies will, at some future time, undoubtedly be found to merge in great and harmonious laws, the connexion will be fully made out, and the claims of order, continuity, and analogy, eventually vindicated."[1] As to the reality of the data on which these speculations rest, each must examine, and judge for himself.

---

[1] Essay on the Spirit of the Inductive Philosophy, p. 109.



Digitized by Microsoft®



Digitized by Microsoft®

CHAPTER I.

Reviews and Replies.—Letter to Times.

ON the appearance of incidents of my life, I had no reason to complain of the neglect of the press, for several journals fell foul of me with commendable speed. I had been thoroughly prepared for abuse from the press generally, and in several instances was by no means disappointed. I have however to thank some of those who reviewed my book, for the fair and candid tone in which they treated the subject. "The Spectator," "The Times," and the "Morning Herald" call for special mention in this respect.

I here give extracts from several of these reviews:—

The following is extracted from a review in the "Parthenon."

"The stereotyped form of beginning these narratives seems to run thus (we quote from Mr. Home's book):—'One evening, as we were seated at the table, the spirits requested that the candles should be extinguished,' or, 'The spirits then gave out, Put out the lights,' which being done, the incantations begin. Suspicious, too, are the circumstances that there is (*sic*) almost invariably a handbell and an accordion concerned, the spirits seemingly being very partial to jingle one and sound the other, or

Digitized by Microsoft®

rather, as we believe, such portable instruments being easily manipulated by Mr. Home. Now if the spirit-mediums would make the big bell of St. Paul's ring out, or play the large organ beneath the dome, we should believe in them; but a small hand-bell tinkled and an accordian played upon will not convert us. It is indeed most clear that Mr. Home and his spirit-medium fraternity are in the most favourable possible conditions to deceive their audience. To the question why the effects are not easily obtained above board (meaning the table) at a first sitting, whereas they are most easily obtained when habituated circles are present, Mr. Home answers, 'that scepticism mars the forces at work, that the spirits accomplish what they do through our life-sphere or atmosphere which is permeated by our wills, and if the will be contrary, the sphere is unfit for being operated upon.' Precisely so; the habituated are those who feel that—

> 'The pleasure surely is as great
> Of being cheated as to cheat,'

and are thus easily imposed upon; so easily, indeed, that we question much whether the dark room even is necessary. Now we would ask in the name of common sense, what there is in these manifestations one whit more extraordinary than the performance of famous jugglers, who, by the way, juggle in broad daylight, and tell you frankly that they intend to cheat your senses, and do so despite all your power to find out their tricks. We observe that Mr. Home is very angry with Lord Brougham and Sir David Brewster, because, after certain performances by Mr. Home at Cox's Hotel in Jermyn Street, both his Lordship and Sir David were sceptical. Sir David declares that neither he nor Lord Brougham were allowed to look under the table at which they were seated; to which Mr. Home illogically replies, 'If Mr. Cox allowed me to conceal machinery under the drapery of his table, noblemen and

Digitized by Microsoft®

gentlemen whom I have visited in every country must have allowed me to do the same thing.'"

To this last remark I reply that the reviewer stops short in his quotation, for I go on to say that "I have for years met, and still meet every day with men of the highest attainments in the arts and sciences who have carefully examined, and have not rested satisfied with conjectures either as to the table, or the machinery alleged to be concealed about my person." I also challenge the writer of the review to point out in my book the passage which he marks as a quotation beginning "that scepticism mars," &c. or to produce any evidence that I ever made such an answer to account for the absence of manifestations. Many remarkable phenomena have been witnessed in my presence by sceptics, and at their "first sitting."

The "Saturday Review," March 21, 1863, dwelt principally on the small number of witnesses, and in mentioning the *séance* at which Lord Brougham and Sir David Brewster were present, said "Lord Brougham has preserved inflexible silence on the subject. Sir David Brewster has openly charged fraud on the whole affair. Mr. Trollope's testimony is only to his belief in Mr. Home's good faith." The "Saturday Review" omits to notice Mr. Trollope's testimony to the facts not only that a large table was moved about in an extraordinary manner, but that while it was being moved about, Sir David looked under it and saw it moving. After endeavouring to destroy the credibility of all the other witnesses, the "Saturday Review" thus sums up, determined to accept no testimony but that of eleven members of one or other of the three learned professions.

"What is wanted, in such a case as that of Mr. Home's alleged prodigies, is the testimony of unprejudiced or adverse witnesses. It is of the first importance in testing any prodigy that the persons by whom, the witnesses before whom, and the circumstances under which, the extraordinary events occurred, should be beyond suspicion.

Digitized by Microsoft®

Mr. Home is, according to his own account and from the testimony of his own book, a weak, credulous, half-educated, fanatical person, born, bred, and educated in wonderful stories, who has lived from his earliest years in a whole atmosphere and mirage of dreaming. The witnesses, few in number and almost entirely unknown, are much in the same condition. Mystics, Theosophists, Mesmerists, Swedenborgians—fanatics of one sort or other, educated and living in an excited and unnatural state of the spiritual faculties—they are representatives of a class coeval with the existence of the human mind, in which a certain part of the mental constitution is in a diseased state, and of which "spiritualism in all ages," that is, the Stellings, the Böhmes, the Paracelsuses, the Guyons, the Hauffes, the Swedenborgs, are the natural result. And as to the circumstances under which the phenomena occurred, we must say that an event is not likely to receive credence when its witnesses are for the most part anonymous writers in magazines, when it is done in a chamber with extinguished lights, and under circumstances purposely arranged to disturb the judgment, and only in the presence of favourable witnesses. The alleged facts have not as yet been sufficiently examined and tested. When the spiritualists are able to produce the testimony of eleven men of high reputation and clear judgment—say of eleven Judges, or eleven Q. C.'s, or eleven Fellows of the College of Physicians, or even of eleven Bishops—pronouncing, after a full and fair investigation, conducted openly and in broad daylight, that they have seen Mr. Home suspended in mid-air, 'a man between ten and eleven stone in weight floating about the room for many minutes,' to use Dr. Gully's explicit language, we should have something else to say. At present—with all due respect to Dr. Gully and to the other ten witnesses, and without charging him or Mr. Home either, with conscious fraud, imposture, or trickery of any sort, and also not denying that such imposture may exist—we must say that whatever the testi-

Digitized by Microsoft®

mony hitherto produced is worth, it is palpably insufficient. The evidence, such as it is, is deficient in quality and quantity; and it comes before us with an antecedent taint. It does not meet the recognised tests of even a common, still less of an exceptional, fact. We do not charge Mr. Home with imposture. This is not our argument. But we do say that alleged miracles, such as many of those of Pagan origin, of the mediæval church, and of the Abbé Paris—to take a very familiar case—are better authenticated than those of Mr. Home, or at least are as well authenticated, though they are now known to be fictitious, partly arising from delusion, partly from conscious imposture. The spiritualists seem to be aware of the stress of this argument, and they answer it by an attempt to show—which, if anything, is the result of Mr. Howitt's book—that all these transactions are true; and their adoption of the Cock Lane Ghost is a remarkable instance of the difficulty which they feel. But does not this line of argument prove rather too much? To hint that there has never been a false miracle is at least as monstrous as Home's doctrine that any miracle is impossible."

This cool way of characterizing Mr. Cox, Mr. Coleman, Dr. Wilkinson, Mr. Pears, Mr. Crawford, Mr. Mason, Dr. Gully, Mr. Jones, Mr. Hutchinson, and Mr. and Mrs. Howitt as "fanatics of one sort or other," on no other evidence than that of their believing in the reality of the manifestations is peculiarly characteristic of the "Saturday Review." I cannot be surprised at their objecting to my having in so many cases yielded to the desire of the witnesses to remain incognito, by giving only their initials. Their full names have been in general made known to all who have made private inquiries, and the veil under which they remain in my book is transparent to most of those who take such interest in the subject as to investigate. The Reviewer, moreover, wholly ignores several names which were given in full in the book.

Complaining of "anonymous witnesses," "The Saturday Review" gives an example of the initials made use of:—

Digitized by Microsoft®

"Dr. J. J. G. Wilkinson also testifies, both in this volume and in the 'Spiritual Magazine,' to a vast array of manifestations. But as to what occurred in England at Mr. Home's first visit to this country, these three names—viz. Mr. Cox, Mr. Coleman, and Dr. Wilkinson, and these alone—are produced by Mr. Home. At Florence we admit that Countess O—— is said by Mr. Home to have seen some very marvellous things; but with Countess O——, or any other anonymous witness, we have no concern. We dismiss Count B——, and Count de K——, and Abbé C——, Countess L——, Princess de B——, and Miss E——, and all the other initials and anonymous witnesses. Testimony like this is simply an insult to the court.

"After another visit to the Continent, in November 1861, Mr. Home returned to England, and his manifestations are attested by 'an esteemed friend' Mr. Jones, of Basinghall Street, Mr. Hutchinson, of the Stock Exchange, 'a Plain Man,' Mr. Cox, and Mr. Wilkinson, Mr. and Mrs. Howitt, 'Mrs. P—— in the Regent's Park,' and 'Mrs. S——.'—And these are all. It comes then to this—that 'the immense number of persons indicated by name or otherwise,' who bear personal testimony to the spirit manifestations in England, are in almost every case anonymous, or indicated only by initials.

I have much pleasure in giving the names in full, and can assure my worthy critic, that it was only from a feeling of delicacy I refrained from giving the names at once. The Countess O—— is the Countess Antoinette Orsini, *née* Countess Orloff. The Count B——, is the Count de Beaumont, of No. 12, Rue Royale. The Count de K——, there are in fact two Counts de K., being the Counts Alexander and Waldimir de Komar. The Abbé C——, is the Abbé Deguery of the Madeleine. who was murdered by the Communists this year. The Princess de B—— is the Princess de Beaurean, *née* Countess de Komar. Miss E—, is Miss Ellice. Mrs. P—— is Mrs. Cranford Parks, of

Digitized by Microsoft®

No. 7, Cornwall Terrace, Regent's Park. Mrs. S——, is Mrs. Henry Senior, sister-in-law of the late Nassau Senior.

The writer says: "Possibly Mr. Home may deny the possibility of a miracle, but this in quite another sense from another famous Mr. Hume, or Home, who also denied the possibility of miracles. The present Mr. Home may say that all this is in accordance with natural laws, if we only knew the whole extent of nature and nature's laws. It is only a natural power co-ordinate with that of gravitation, which, in his case, suspends the law of gravitation. That is to say, there is no miracle in the case, because it is equally a law of nature that heavy bodies should, and should not, fall to the ground. But this is, of course, mere trifling. For all practical purposes, the events accredited by the testimony of the eleven witnesses are miracles. They are things contrary to all known, and firm, and unaltered experience, and the very nature of the facts, whether we choose to call them miracles or not, is such that the usual criteria of miracles may be applied to them. We admit with the opponents of Hume—the Scotch Hume, not the present American Home."

No one could, surely, in the face of this, deny that the writer in the "Saturday Review," at least has the power of miracle-working. I am changed by his magic and truthful pen into an "American." The first line of the first chapter of my book begins thus: "I was born near Edinburgh." I then proceed to state that I went to America when I was about nine years old. It might perhaps be well to tell the "Saturday Review," that Edinburgh is a goodly sized city of Scotland, and that I am a Scotchman.

The "Athenæum." March 14th, 1863, commenced by attacking the anonymous character of the preface as follows:

"This impudent and foolish book criticises itself. An introduction, professing to be 'written by a friend,' presents Mr. Home as 'delicate in health, extremely sensitive

Digitized by Microsoft®

in spirit, coming forward with his narration for no conceivable end but to propagate a knowledge of what he regards as important truths; . . . . a man of a religious turn of mind, pure-hearted and unworldly'—in fact, as a person who is no fit object for the jests of railing Rabshakehs! Mr. Home throughout his book endorses this sweet and saintly character of himself and of his proceedings very much after the fashion of Wandering Willie in Scott's 'Redgauntlet,' who modestly capped the panegyrics of the notorious little knave Benjie by adding, 'All is true that the little boy says'! But we do not know the name of the mystic's 'little boy.' He is only Mr. Home's friend. Mr. Home answers for him, and he answers for Mr. Home: that is all we learn."

This attack I have now answered by reprinting this preface, with the name of its author, the late gifted Dr. Robert Chambers. The Reviewer thus disposes summarily of the evidence:

"Three points may be stated as necessary to be taken in conjunction, even by those disposed to admit the existence of a class of supernatural mediators, and who may wish to judge how far Mr. Home is a sincere and self-deluded member of such priesthood, how far the reverse. First, it has been again and again urged that persons who trafficked in awful mysteries like these, being commissioned from on high, were at once vulgarized, deteriorated, handed over to the counsels of evil spirits, if they spoke to the dead, or made the dead speak, or called them or any part of them into visible presence for lucre. When one wretched charlatan after another has been unmasked, the pure have stood sorrowfully aloof, and repudiated all fellowship with one who tampered with his birthright for a mess of pottage. 'Medium' after 'medium,' detected in imposture, has been anathematized or excused as having handed himself over to the devil by the base act of sale and barter of his gift. Now Mr. Home, as Mr. Howitt, indeed, has already told us, has gained a competence by his ghastly

Digitized by Microsoft®

shows. Rings, purses (not empty) other presents more solid than praise have been showered on him as thickly as the slippers with which devout ladies glorify their dear favourite clergyman. Secondly, the Romish Church has always held practices such as those by which Mr. Home has thriven to be sinful, heretical, and tending to damnation. Those who remember this canon are invited to consider how Mr. Home, after being converted from Congregationalism to Roman Catholicism, quarrelled with the sincere and stern Père Ravignan, who insisted on his desisting from such unauthorized practices; also how he gave up his next confessor, who, it was hoped, might be more lenient to one who was driving so brisk and profitable a trade, and amusing so many great people and crowned heads. So that Mr. Home floats strangely, not in the air alone, but between the two stools of authority and private judgment. Thirdly, the witnesses brought by him into the box who answer to their names are few. A great person has testified to his marvellous power and unimpeachable integrity; a sovereign has been as much impressed for his soul's good as the Emperor of Russia was by William Allen the Quaker, but we do not learn who the great person and the sovereign were. The godfathers and godmothers who appear in these pages to accredit these proceedings are Mr. Wilkinson (a spiritualist before he saw Mr. Home), Mr. J. G. Crawford, 'a gentleman who had for years resisted all belief in such phenomena,' Mr. T. A. Trollope, Mr. James Wason, solicitor, Dr. Gully of Malvern, Mr. John Jones of Basinghall Street, Mr. James Hutchinson of the Stock Exchange, Mr. Cox of the hotel in Jermyn Street, Mr. Coleman of Bayswater, Mr. and Mrs. Howitt, and Mrs. S. C. Hall—which last witness deposes to having received the present of a lace cap from the deceased Mrs. Home, laid by supernatural hands on her knee!"

The Reviewer thus shows how carelessly he has glanced at the book:—

Digitized by Microsoft®

"In the course of his foreign wanderings, Mr. Home fell in with the sister of Count Gregoire Koucheleff Besborodko. The lady was an ardent spiritualist and medium, like himself. They were married."

If I were ever so much a miracle worker, I would hide my diminished head in the presence of my critics. I stated in page 126 of my first volume that my wife was a sister of the Countess but here she must needs be changed into a Koucheleff Besborodko—nay, more, I now discover that she "was an ardent spiritualist and medium"; while on page 127 I give as a quotation her conversation with me when we were already engaged to be married—the following:

"Do tell me all about spirit-rapping, for you know I don't believe in it." I would most earnestly request my critics to do me the honour of reading my book, as Truth will stand when Fiction will fail.

After giving some extracts from the book, the writer thus concludes:—

"Here is enough, and more than enough, some readers will say, of Mr. Home's revelations, and of the testimonies of his disciples. From first to last there is not a statement in the book so presented as to warrant a sensible man in paying attention to it. To exhibit such a volume is to expose it; and we shall only repeat our first remark—the book contains its own criticism."

The "Morning Herald," April 4th, 1863, approached the subject in a spirit of fairness, commencing with one of the narratives in the early part of the book, and continuing as follows:—

"The general character of the circumstances related in this volume is probably already well known to most of our readers. At certain meetings, usually in the evening, almost always in partial darkness, knocks are heard, furniture is moved about, spirit-hands grasp the feet or knees of the investigators, accordions are played without human agency, handkerchiefs thrown under the table are returned knotted, the medium is sometimes raised into the air, and

Digitized by Microsoft®

floats above the heads of the other persons present, by rapping at the mention of the letters of the alphabet the tables answer questions put to them, sometimes the investigators receive messages from deceased friends written in a handwriting they recognise. These are the ordinary manifestations which Mr. Home describes, and he asserts that they have been often repeated in the presence of many witnesses. How are we to deal with these assertions? It is obvious that the easiest way would be to treat Mr. Home as an impostor or a lunatic, and to make fun of the undignified tricks by which the spirits are said to reveal their presence. But though this course would be easy, we cannot think it wise. In the first place, this spiritualism is to its believers a sort of religious faith, and faith is strengthened, not hurt, by ridicule. But, besides this, the matter has grown too great for laughter. If it be false, then the impostor who has tampered with the highest hopes and feelings of humanity, and has driven scores, perhaps hundreds, into madness, is a villain to be denounced, not laughed at; while the imposture itself would be a matter for tears rather than mirth. But if these things be true, we dare not bring our jester's tinkling cap into the presence of the awful mysteries of the unseen world. No; spiritualism is too grave a subject in itself, and it has taken too firm a hold upon men's minds for it to be laughed out of the world. It is a matter for serious investigation, and the appearance of these volumes gives us a good opportunity for looking closely into it.

"We need hardly repeat the strong *à priori* arguments against its truth. It is improbable that any communication should be established between the living and the spirits of the dead; still more improbable that such communications should take place at times which presented no special reason for it, and to persons so placed in life that the revelation produces the least good to others and the greatest evil to themselves. And it seems most improbable that the departed spirits should establish the communication by

Digitized by Microsoft®

knocking on tables, by playing 'Home! sweet home' on an accordion, or by tying knots in a pocket-handkerchief. Any man who enters on the investigation of spiritualism is bound, we think, to keep these arguments constantly in mind, that he may not believe too easily. But if the recorded phenomena seem absurd, we cannot say that they are impossible. Certainly in ordinary phrase men would say that it was 'impossible' for a table to move without being pushed, or to rise without being lifted by human agency. But the more a man learns the more wary he is as to this word 'impossible.' Mr. Grove shows us in his book on the 'Correlation of Forces' how little we know as to physical laws; on the relations of matter and spirit we know hardly anything. All we can say is, that these manifestations appear to be to us in the highest degree improbable. But here we are met by evidence that, improbable or not, they have taken place. Mr. Home is our first witness, and we are bound to say that we cannot see in this book any marks of insanity or deceit. To think him merely insane would not be enough to refute his statements, for he tells us that the manifestations have been seen by numbers of people in different countries; and it is plain that if they have believed also, either they must all have been insane, or he must be an impostor, or the thing must be true. If, like Robert Barclay or Pastor Oberlin, or many others mentioned in Mr. Howitt's book, he spoke only of visions which he himself had, we might suppose him insane; but when he declares, and makes a dozen other persons believe, that an accordion is played without hands, unless we suppose that all the witnesses were mad too, and that the instrument did not play at all, we are narrowed to this alternative, that either Mr. Home is an impostor, or that spiritualism is true.

"Now as to imposture. Assuredly Mr Home is very different from the ordinary type of an impostor. When only eighteen years old he began his career of mediumship, by doing, or appearing to do, things so difficult as to

Digitized by Microsoft®

involve almost a certainty of the early detection of any sort of deceit. In 1852 Mr. Bryant, the American poet, joined with three others in a declaration that at a *séance*, when the room was well lighted, the table rose clear of the floor, and floated in the atmosphere for several seconds; that Mr. Home frequently urged them to hold his hands and feet, and that every possible opportunity was afforded them for the closest inspection. They closed the declaration by saying, 'We know that we were not imposed upon nor deceived.' Again, we cannot but remark that the manifestations are not more elaborate now than they were twelve years ago. We might expect a successful impostor to use his advantages of experience and wealth to produce new and stronger effects; but this has not been the case with Mr. Home. The spirit hands (by far the most difficult manifestation for an impostor to produce) are said to have been seen at a very early period of his mediumship. Again, an impostor always tries to weave his deceptions into a system; generally, to form some sort of sect. Now, Mr. Home, with every temptation to do this in that he has persuaded so many of the truth of the manifestations, not only does not try to establish any great position for himself as the high priest of spiritualism, but he constantly denies that he has any power in the matter. After twelve years of mediumship he does not propound any system; and he speaks of himself as merely a helpless instrument. Thus speaking of the ridicule and obloquy which are cast upon those who confess their belief in spiritualism, he says:—'If an example be needed of the truth of this, if it be not an obvious fact already in this uncharitable day, let my adventurous friends watch the extent to which I shall be abused, and called bad names, and given to the devil, for simply and truthfully writing in this little book a few of the incidents of my life, *with the production of which I have had nothing to do.*' In fact, Mr. Home speaks of his book as a collection of facts, which are worthy of investigation, and may

Digitized by Microsoft®

be found useful in revealing some of the yet hidden laws of creation. 'It would be hard,' he says in another place, 'if I were held answerable for facts which occur in connection with my physical organization, and towards which I am, in mind and intent, wholly passive, even if there were any harm in them.' We must note also the strangeness of the fact that Mr. Home has never been detected, if, indeed, he is an impostor. To move heavy tables, to raise himself to a horizontal position near the ceiling, to play tunes upon guitars, &c., these would require elaborate machinery. But these things have been done in palaces, and in private houses, in every part of Europe. If we believe Mr. Home to be an impostor, we shall have to suppose that a number of noblemen and gentlemen have knowingly aided the deceit. But, turning to more positive evidence, we will give a list of persons whom Mr. Home calls as witnesses. We omit the American names, which are numerous. Mrs. Trollope and her sister; Mr. T. Adolphus Trollope; Mrs. S. C. Hall; Mr. and Mrs. William Howitt; Dr. J. M. Gully, of Malvern; Mr. James Hutchinson, many years chairman of the Stock Exchange; Mr. W. M. Wilkinson, of Hampstead; Mr. James Wason, solicitor, of Wason Buildings, Liverpool; Dr. Hoefer, 'one of the most learned men in France;' Mr. John Jones, of Basinghall Street; Mr. J. G. Crawford; Mr. Gilbert Davidson; Mr. Cox, of Jermyn Street; Mr. Benjamin Coleman, of Bayswater; Dr. J. J. Wilkinson; Madame de Cardonne, of 233, Rue St. Dominique, St. Germain; Mr. T. S. Clarke. Mr. Home has been received by the Emperor of the French, the Czar of Russia, the present King of Prussia, the King of Wurtemburg, and the Queen of Holland.

"Mr. W. M. Wilkinson asserts that Lord Lyndhurst has witnessed manifestations. Mr. Wason states that the *séance* at which he was present was at the mansion of a person of distinction, in Hyde-park Terrace, and that the other investigators were two baronets, one an M.P., and

Digitized by Microsoft®

the other the heir and representative of a deceased M.P. of eminent ability; the wife of a distinguished living M.P., and three others, besides Mr. Home.

"Dr. Gully was present at the *séance* described in the famous article called 'Stranger than Fiction,' which appeared in the 'Cornhill Magazine' for August, 1860. He fully corroborates the assertions made in that article, and says that the other gentlemen present were a solicitor in large practice, and two well-known writers of solid instructive works. Mrs. S. C. Hall tells of a meeting which she attended, where a young lady was the medium, and says, 'I was forced to believe that there was truth in mediumship, and that *here* was the means used for communicating from the spirits of those gone before to those who still lingered in the flesh.' At page 63 of this volume, a remarkable account is given of certain spirit communications said to have been made at a *séance* at Ealing, to a distinguished novelist, whom the reader will have no hesitation in recognising as Sir Edward Bulwer Lytton. Now, if Mr. Home be an impostor, the publication of this book is an act of the greatest folly. Not only are all those we have named pledged witnesses to the truth of spiritualism; but if any man of all the hundreds of Englishmen who have seen Mr. Home has ever discovered any sort of machinery or trick by which these wonderful results have been obtained, he is bound to speak out. However loth he may be to come forward into public discussions, longer silence will be criminal. The testimony of the persons named by Mr. Home will, of course, have more weight with their personal friends than with the general public; instead of extracting their narratives, we may perhaps repeat a story which we have heard from a friend on whose judgment and truthfulness we can rely, a clergyman of the Church of England, who has for many years been engaged in teaching. He tells us that his wife was a very sensitive medium. One night, when only his brother was with them, the three

Digitized by Microsoft®

agreed to have a *séance*. The wife sat at the table; he in a corner of the room asked questions by writing them on a slate. The questions and answers were as follow:—'Is there a spirit in the room?' 'Yes.'—'Whose?' 'A—— B——' (a name was mentioned which no one present recognised).—'Did you see me in life?' 'Yes.'—'Where?' 'At R——.'—'What was I doing?' 'Preaching.' The party were startled at this, for our friend had only once in his life visited the place named, and then he took the Sunday service. One more question was put. 'What was my text?' A passage of Scripture was named in answer; the clergyman had forgotten, in the lapse of several years, what text he really had taken, but he went to his sermon case and found the answer was correct. Until he told us this story, we could not have supposed it possible that we should doubt his word. Even on this testimony we cannot fully believe. He says, as said the writer in the 'Cornhill Magazine,' 'I would not myself have believed it on any one's assertion, I cannot expect you to believe it on mine.' We will not admit that we are believers in spiritualism, but we are compelled to own that the evidence is too strong to be ridiculed or disregarded. We should much like to meet Mr. Home, and in company with other gentlemen who have never been witnesses of these manifestations, and with the one desire of obtaining truth, to thoroughly investigate the subject. Until then our strongly-rooted opinions on the one hand, and the weight of evidence on the other, oblige us to hold our judgment in suspense. We have only space to add one or two hints upon the general subject. We would strongly urge that it should not be discussed with children, or with persons subject to any of the nervous disorders which sometimes lead to insanity. We can think of nothing more likely to drive one mad, than the belief that the barrier between the living and the dead is broken down, and that those whom we have known and lost may touch us and speak to us,

Digitized by Microsoft®

telling us messages of truth or *falsehood*. In this last word is an awful thought. Mr. Home and Mr. Howitt both believe that we may have communication with evil spirits as well as with good; and that the former may tell men lies to deceive them to their destruction. It is a terrible belief. If a man were once persuaded that it was a supernatural voice which spoke to him, he would be at the mercy of every word that voice might say. Where are those—are there, indeed, any—whose faith in the God whom the Bible reveals to us would be strong enough to put aside with disbelief a message which was known to come from the world of spirits? Our clergy should look to it, it is no trifling matter. If this thing be true, it is a great blessing to the world that it has not been linked to false doctrines. There is a text which speaks of wonders which, 'if it were possible should deceive the very elect;' if spiritualism be true, may it not be sent to prepare the world for those lying prophets, working real miracles to support false doctrines, who are to be the last trial of the Church's faith?"

The "Literary Times," March 21, 1863, said: "In conclusion, we have but to state that, should 'The Incidents in My Life, be a true and honest book, it is one of the most important works ever presented to the world. But should the opposite be the case, then Mr. Home is the greatest impostor that ever deluded mankind. It is intolerable that he and his friends should occupy their present equivocal position. Why cannot society rouse itself, and determine to turn out these men as false prophets, or acknowledge them as the apostles of a new faith, however worthless that faith may be to the world?"

I do not consider "The Incidents in My Life" as "one of the most important works ever presented to the world," but I know it to be a "true and honest book." It may be intolerable to the writer of the review that with my friends I should enjoy any position whatever. I fear his power of toleration must be further tested, inasmuch

Digitized by Microsoft®

as my present position is a great improvement on what it was when he wrote, and I only ask "society to rouse itself" in the form of honest unprejudiced investigation.

The reviewer in "The Critic," April, 1863, after criticising (?) Mr. Howitt's "History of the Supernatural," goes on thus: "We now turn to Mr. D. D. Home's 'Incidents in My Life,' and we must frankly confess that after the perusal of it, we felt a great deal of that Christian charity and disposition to hearken which Mr. Howitt had awakened in our bosom evaporate before the unparalleled impudence of this 'medium.' * * With him (Mr. Howitt) we may be perfectly sure that his faith is genuine. * * He is actuated by no other motive than a sincere desire to have the truth known. Can we say the same of Mr. Home? * * But it is not by any means to the spiritual element in the book that we take exception, so much as to the bad taste exhibited throughout." The writer then takes me to task for what he is pleased to term my "impudent treatment of Sir David Brewster, and proceeds to show that, not only has his "bosom" been bereft of "Christian charity," but of truth, for he gives an anecdote (?), invented apparently on the spur of the moment. I allude to it in my letter to "The Times" of April 16th.

The "Spectator," March 14, 1863, which noticed the work as by David Douglas Home, said—"This is a very embarrassing book to review," and proceeded in a strain, which from an unbelieving point of view was very fair, to say—"Nor do the marvels related to us rest by any means entirely on Mr. Home's own testimony. If that gentleman be a deliberate deceiver, it would still be very difficult to regard the stories here related as affecting *his* veracity alone, though, of course, we cannot tell how far the *imagination* of secondary actors might aid in the work of delusion. The facts of the book, whether false or not, all drive at one conclusion, that the gates between the world of the living and the departed are always open, and

Digitized by Microsoft®

that the conditions are by no means very rare which enable us to receive proof that they are thus open, and to profit by the supernatural experience of those who have passed away.' These phenomena are the a b c of life with Mr. Home, if we may believe him to be sincere; and yet, of course, if we could accept them as genuine, they ought almost to absorb the attention of the higher science, of the deepest faith, and of the truest human affections. * *

"Without, therefore, any predisposition to accuse Mr. Home of dishonesty, which, if it be dishonesty, would seem to be shared by one witness, at least, in the honour of whose personal character we have good reason to believe, Dr. Wilkinson, the well known biographer of Swedenborg—we cannot help approaching this book in the attitude of simple incredulity. * *

"On the stories connected with Mrs. Home's death, related partly by her husband, and partly by her friends Mrs. Howitt and Mrs. S. C. Hall, we have no wish to comment. Almost more marvellous than the rest, it is still written with so much feeling that it would be brutal to ridicule, and yet is quite impossible to believe. We should add, however, that the absurd character of the phenomena once granted, Mr. Home's book is throughout written with more simplicity, and less affectation of any kind than any other book of its class. * *

"This article is not criticism—for the only true criticism on the book is one of three practical verdicts,—'Sincere, but insane,' 'sane, but mendacious,' or 'both sane and sincere.' We see no sort of indication at all that Mr. Home is insane, and if he is, he must have made so many other people insane also that the first verdict would be irrational. Now we have no right to give the second, and no power to give the third. Without personal knowledge of a man, it is unjust to decide against his veracity especially when backed by men who, if enthusiastic, are at least known to us to be honourable."

The "Spectator" further noticed an historical error,

Digitized by Microsoft®

with regard to a circumstance related in the book at page 123, and the same was noticed by the "Times." This I replied to in my letter to the "Times," which will be found further on. In the next chapter I also give from the review in the "Spectator" an extract which refers to the controversy with Sir David Brewster.

The review in the "Times" commenced with the remark:—"This volume in which Mr. Home recounts the incidents of his life, or rather of his communion with the world of spirits, is a very odd production in this materialistic age." After an analysis of the book, by no means unfair, and extending to nearly three columns, the article concludes with an anecdote of Doctor Johnson, terminating with the remark, "The story wants congruity." As wit has been defined to be "The apt association of incongruous ideas," this remark may be witty, but I have no need to quarrel with it as it contains no argument against what I had published. At the time the review appeared I was in France, but on its being forwarded to me, I wrote at once to the "Times" the following letter, which appeared in that paper on April 16, 1863:—

Sir,—Allow me to thank you for the generous criticism of my book which appeared in your columns on the 9th of April. I do not censure any one for a want of belief in the strange phenomena which occur in my presence; but I do consider it unfair when the critics write to condemn a book which they have not even taken the trouble to read. One writer kills my child, another my father, and a third calls me an American. The "Spectator," as you justly say, discovers a mistake in the dates as I gave them. I at once wrote to the editor, giving him the name and address of the gentleman to whom the incident occurred, that he might ascertain how the mistake had arisen. I then wrote to say that I had seen the gentleman, who had just returned from the continent, and was ill, but at the same time explained the error as being

Digitized by Microsoft®

entirely mine, inasmuch as the fact alluded to actually transpired in the autumn of 1856, and was all the more singular, as coming at a time when the strange power had left me. This also I explained by saying that the young officer alluded to as "Gregoire" became a medium, and this singular faculty remained with him many months. I enclose you also the name and address of the gentleman, and only request that they may not be published. Still I know Mr. ——— will favour you with any information you may require, and that he will willingly testify to, not only the entire truthfulness of what I related, but will say that I did not make the story nearly as wonderful as it was in reality.

As regards the other story "which requires explanation," I am in the very same position as yourself, and will be only too pleased that it should be "verified or explained." I have heard the same story told in so many different forms, and still always related as having occurred to Mr. Monckton Milnes, that I would fain know where such wilful misrepresentations could commence. The incident was a very simple one to begin with. Mr. Monckton Milnes was present at a *séance* where there were seven or eight ladies and gentlemen. I was seated furthest from him at the table, and during a part of the *séance*, which was in a darkened room, I felt something tangibly material pass over my face. I put up my hand to retain whatever it might be, but it eluded my grasp. This I told to those who were present, and, on some one saying, "I have just been touched also," I replied, "Well, why did you not do as I did, sir, and try to retain it?" Mr. Monckton Milnes then said, "I have been touched several times, and now I have taken whatever it was. Oh, it is a pocket handkerchief!" The question then became general as to whose it might be, there being two or three on the laps of the ladies, or else on the table; but we could not then ascertain to whom the handkerchief belonged. The *séance* continued at least half-an-hour

Digitized by Microsoft®

after this, and when the light came the handkerchief chanced to be mine. Now, I would like to have it explained how, by any possibility, I could have stretched out my arms sufficiently to enable me to touch Mr. Monckton Milnes, he being, as I before said, furthest from me at the table; and, even if I did, why could I not as well have taken one of the handkerchiefs which were on the table, instead of taking my own? The simple fact of the handkerchief being mine, proves nothing to my way of thinking. How did it get over his head when the slightest movement I made would not have failed to be observed by those seated next to me? It has not been my lot either to have to deal with fools or mad people, and if after thirteen years of public life, the greater part of which time I have spent with those who watched my every action suspiciously, anxiously hoping to discover some material means whereby all these things could be accomplished,—if, after all this, any persons will come forward and state an instance where they, and those present with them, proved me to be an impostor, I will abide by their decision. It must not be any *one* person, for the simple reason that my experience has been peculiar in this respect. I have found people who, to sustain a preconceived idea, would not hesitate at the most gross untruths in vindication of their ideas. To prove this, I have only to allude to a story told in the "Critic" of this month, where it is related of me as arguing that a purported message from a spirit, could not be otherwise than true, as it was my father's spirit who was speaking. My father is alive and well, and the whole story is without even a syllable of truth. Why does not the "gentleman" (?) who relates that story to the "Critic" come out and give us his name?

These things are too serious to be treated otherwise than with candour. The mere fact of calling a man hard names does not prove him to be deserving of them. Let every man prove his position, and, if five hundred names of

Digitized by Microsoft®

men of rank, men of good sound judgment, and men well-known for their truthfulness,—I say if these can be taken, then is my position proved, at least as being guiltless of ever having deceived them. There must be no "conjectural" imposition, for these conjectures carry men too far from simple truth. The newspaper reports of my having made a large fortune by my powers are simple fabrications or "conjectures."

The only good I have ever derived from "the gift" is the knowledge that many who had never believed in a future existence are now happy in the certitude of "life to come."

I have the honour to be, sir, yours most obediently,

D. D. Home.

"Chateau Laroche, par St. Astier, Derdogne,
"France, April 13."

Digitized by Microsoft®

CHAPTER II.

SIR DAVID BREWSTER, LORD BROUGHAM, LETTERS AND TESTIMONY, DR. ELLIOTTSON, PROPHETIC INCIDENTS.

AS the controversy with the late Sir David Brewster was discussed at some length in the Appendix to my former volume, it had been my intention to have let the matter rest, and not to allude to it further. But the subject has been revived by Brewster's daughter in the "Home Life" of her father, and I am compelled to notice her statements, which were alluded to by Mr. Coleman, in the "Spiritual Magazine" for May, 1870, in an article from which I extract some passages as follows:—

"The conduct of the late Sir David Brewster in his relations with the celebrated medium, Mr. Daniel D. Home, and the controversy which arose in the year 1855, form a prominent episode in the history of English Spiritualism.

"That 'dead men tell no tales' is an adage which spiritualists cannot admit. We *know* that the so-called dead do in many instances, and under certain conditions, return and tell us many tales.

"But we who have had much experience are cautious in accepting all that is revealed to us in this way, and were I now dealing with a message purporting to have come from the spirit of the departed philosopher through

Digitized by Microsoft®

the ordinary channels of mediumship, I should hesitate before venturing to make a public announcement of the fact. There are, however, other means by which the voices of the dead speak to us—namely, by the records of their public and private acts when living. I have just found one, which coming as it does through the mediumship of Sir David Brewster's own daughter, will not be disputed; and as it tends to justify the statements made by those who stood forward in 1857 to defend Mr. Home and the genuine character of the manifestations witnessed by Sir David Brewster and Lord Brougham, it may, I think with propriety, find a place in the pages of this journal.

"The late Mr. William Cox, of Jermyn Street, with whom Mr. Home was residing in 1854-5, invited Lord Brougham and Sir David Brewster[1] to a private *séance;* and Mr. Cox, who was an intelligent and much respected gentleman, told me the following day how profoundly impressed both of his visitors had been with what they had witnessed, and he described minutely to me the several incidents which took place, of which I made notes at the time. This information was corroborated in a short conversation which I subsequently had with Lord Brougham, and again in a lengthy discussion with Sir David at the Athenæum Club; when he fully admitted the facts and said that he could neither attribute them to trickery nor delusion of the senses. 'But,' he very emphatically added, slapping his knee, 'spirit is the last thing I will give in to!'

"It will be seen that when Sir David Brewster was publicly making the most ungenerous and unfounded imputations upon Mr. Home, and denying in the most unqualified manner the statements made by me in October, 1855, he had privately recorded, in the month of June previously, a complete refutation of his own words; added

[1] A slight inaccuracy, see note on page 51.

Digitized by Microsoft®

to which it is now shown that Sir David was himself A MEDIUM! A SEER in fact, with his own special experiences. His daughter's statement upon this point is sufficiently distinct and conclusive: her account of what she calls his "*dual* nature," and his ultimate convictions upon Spiritualism are curious and instructive. Mrs. Gordon says:—

"'Brewster's character was peculiarly liable to misconstruction from its distinctly *dual* nature; it was made up of opposites, and his peculiarly impulsive temperament and expressions laid him open to the charge of inconsistency, although he never recognized it in himself, conscious that he spoke what was consistent with the point of view whence he took his observations at the time. Accustomed to look at every subject with the critical investigation of the man of science, he yet united the feelings of the man of impulse, and he spoke as moved by either habit. Nothing could show this better than his views and feelings with regard to clairvoyance and spirit-rapping. Like many Scotchmen of genius and intellect he had had a strong leaning to the superstitious from the days of the steeple-vault and the cottage under the apple tree, balanced, however, by a scientific mind which required proof and demonstration for whatever came before it. His own quaint confession that he was 'afraid of ghosts, though he did not believe in them,' was as near the truth as possible. Living in an old house, haunted, it was said, by the learned shade of George Buchanan, in which certainly the strangest and most unaccountable noises were frequently heard, his footsteps used sometimes to perform the transit from his study to his bedroom in the dead of night in double-quick time; and in the morning he used to confess that sitting up alone had made him feel quite *eerie*. On one of these occasions when the flight had been more than usually rapid, he recounted having distinctly seen the form of the late Rev. Charles Lyon, then Episcopal Clergyman of St. Andrew's,

Digitized by Microsoft®

and an attached friend of his own, rising up pale and grey like a marble bust. He often mentioned his relief when he found that nothing had occurred to his friend, and pointed out what a good ghost story had thus been spoiled. A certain pleasurable excitement was combined with this *eeriness*, and many will recollect the charm of his ghost stories, recounted with so much simplicity and earnestness and *vraisemblance* of belief, as on one occasion to be rewarded by the perplexing compliment of a fair young listener at Ramornie fainting dead away.

"'On the other hand he was equally fond of giving natural and scientific explanations of ghostly marvels, and used to dwell with great interest upon the difficulties of evidence in everything connected with the supernatural, pointing out the unconscious deviations from exact testimony given by persons of undoubted rectitude under the influence of prepossession. Much of this mingled feeling he carried with him into his investigations of clairvoyance and its kindred marvels.

"'He really wished to believe in many wonders to which his constitution of mind utterly refused credence; and this feeling combined with a characteristic courtesy and wish to please, often misled those into whose pretensions he was most critically examining.

"'On one occasion, when the exhibition of a lady clairvoyante moved his companion to an expression of indignant unbelief, which was declared to be the cause of failure, his gentleness and courtesy, smoothing away difficulties, apologising for the mistakes of supernatural powers, and giving every facility for greater success, prevented the dim-sighted clairvoyante from recognising the equal but far more philosophical unbelief which was brought to bear upon her case. He always affirmed that, of the many cases which had thus come within his ken, he had never seen anything so wonderful that he could say it *could* have no natural explanation, though, of a few he said frankly that he could neither see nor understand the solution.

Digitized by Microsoft®

He latterly took even deeper views of this school of wonders, searching the scriptures minutely for passages describing the spirits that 'peeped and muttered' of old, or those whose 'lying wonders' are yet to come, and giving it as his belief that, if modern spiritualism with its manifestations be a truth, it may be a fulfilment of the prophesied work of the Evil One and his agents.'"

Mrs. Gordon also says:—'Although his timidity had the dual element, displayed long before in the Grammar School and playground of Jedburgh—of never fearing the face of man; he exhibited much of it in connection with the lower creation." And she might have added that there is a wide distinction between the physical courage which stimulates a man to do battle with his fists, and the moral courage requisite to declare truth boldly, no matter how much danger there may be that his reputation will suffer from his so doing.

In order to show the dual character of Sir David, which I have marked by similar figures in each letter, I here republish his letter to Mr. Coleman in October, so far as relates to the *séance* at Cox's Hotel, beside that which he had written to his daughter in June.

In October he wrote:

"I may once for all admit that both Lord Brougham and myself freely acknowledged that we were puzzled with Mr. Home's performances, and could not account for them. Neither of us pretend to be expounders of conundrums, whether verbal or mechanical; but if we had

The following appears in the "Home Life," under the date of June, 1855.

Last of all I went with Lord Brougham to a *séance* of the new spirit-rapper, Mr. Home, a lad of twenty, the son of a brother of the late Earl of Home.[1] He went to

[1] I do not think Sir David had any intention of prevaricating in this letter to Mrs. Gordon, and I can only suppose that on this point he had been misinformed. My father is a natural son

Digitized by Microsoft®

been permitted to take a peep (1.) beneath the drapery of Mr. Cox's table, we should have been spared the mortification of this confession. I come now to the facts of the case:

"1. It is not true, as stated by you, that a large dinner-table was moved about at Mr. Cox's in the most extraordinary manner. (2.)

"2. It is not true, as you state, that a large accordion 'was conveyed by an invisible, or any other, agency into my hand.' I took it up myself, and it would not utter a sound.

"3. It is not true that the accordion was conveyed into Lord Brougham's hand. It was placed in it.

"4. It is not true that the accordion *played an air throughout*, in Lord Brougham's hands. It merely squeaked.

America at the age of seven, and though a naturalized American, is actually a Scotchman. Mr. Home lives in Coxe's hotel, Jermyn Street; and Mr. Coxe, who knows Lord Brougham, wished him to have a *séance*, and his lordship invited me to accompany him in order to assist in finding out the trick. We four sat down at a moderately-sized table, the structure of which we were invited to examine. (1.) In a short time the table shuddered, and a tremulous motion ran up all our arms; at our bidding these motions ceased and returned. The most unaccountable rappings were produced in various parts of the table; and the table actually rose from the ground when no

---

of Alexander, tenth Earl of Home. Mrs. Gordon seems to have inherited the dual nature of her father, for the present Earl of Home having written to her to ascertain on what grounds the claim of my being a son of a brother of the late Earl was made out, she replied that they were my own, and that I had put them forth even in the Chancery suit of Lyon v. Home. Lord Home wrote to a mutual friend to ascertain the truth of this, at the same time stating he had no remembrance of such a thing as my having made such a claim. I wrote a letter for his lordship to see, in which I stated that I had no desire to establish any such claim, and stating what my connection with the family was.

Digitized by Microsoft®

"5. It is not true, as stated in an article referred to by Mr. Home, that Lord Brougham's 'watch was taken out of his pocket, and found in the hands of some other person in the room.' No such experiment was tried.

"6. It is not true, as stated by Mr. Cox, that I said that Mr. Home's experiments 'upset the philosophy of fifty years.' These are the words of Mr. Coleman, used, as he alleges, by himself, and very untruly put into my mouth by Mr. Cox.

"Although I have not appealed to Lord Brougham's memory in reference to these statements, I have no doubt that his Lordship would confirm, were it necessary, all that I have said.

"In reply to Mr. Cox, I may take this opportunity to answer his request, by telling him what I have seen, and what I think of it. At Mr. Cox's house, Mr. Home, Lord Brougham, and myself, sat down to a small table, Mr. Home having previously requested us to examine if there was any machinery about his person, an examination, however, which we declined to hand was upon it. A *larger table* was produced, and exhibited similar movements. (2.) An accordion was held in Lord Brougham's hand, and gave out a single note; but the experiment was a failure; it would not play either in his hand or mine. A small handbell was then laid down with its mouth on the carpet; and after lying for some time, it actually rang, when nothing could have touched it. (3.) The bell was then placed on the other side, still upon the carpet, and it came over to me and placed itself in my hand. It did the same to Lord Brougham.

These were the principal experiments. We could give no explanation of them, and could not conjecture how they could be produced by any kind of mechanism. (4.)

Hands are sometimes seen and felt; the hand often grasps another, and melts away, as it were, under the grasp. The object of asking Lord Brougham and me seems

Digitized by Microsoft®

make. When all our hands were upon the table, noises were heard — rappings in abundance; and, finally, when we rose up the table actually rose, as appeared to me, from the ground. This result I do not pretend to explain; but rather than believe that spirits made the noise, I will conjecture that the raps were produced by Mr. Home's toes, which, as will be seen, were active on another occasion; or, as Dr. Schiff has shown, 'by the repeated displacement of the tendon of the *peroneus longus* muscle in the sheath in which it slides behind the external *mallelous*;' and rather than believe that spirits raised the table, I will conjecture that it was done by the agency of Mr. Home's feet, which were always below it.

"Some time after this experiment, Mr. Home left the room and returned: probably to equip himself for the feats which were to be performed by the spirits beneath a large round table covered with copious drapery, beneath which nobody was allowed to look.

"The spirits are powerless above board. Besides the exto have been to get our favourable opinion of the exhibition; but though neither of us can explain what we saw, we do not believe that it was the work of idle spirits."

NOTE.

A further evidence of the duality of Sir David Brewster is displayed in the course of this single short letter to his daughter, for in the commencement he says, "Lord Brougham invited me to accompany him," and at the end he speaks of "the object of asking Lord Brougham and me." The fact being that Lord Brougham had been invited, and about two hours before the *séance* sent word that he wished to bring Sir David Brewster. As I am not in the habit of giving exhibitions, no favourable opinion was sought for from either visitor.

Digitized by Microsoft®

periments with the accordion, already mentioned, a small hand-bell to be rung by the spirits, was placed on the ground, near my feet. I placed my feet round it in the form of an angle, to catch any intrusive apparatus. The bell did not ring (3.); but when taken to a place near Mr. Home's feet, it speedily came across, and placed its handle in my hand. This was amusing.

"It did the same thing bunglingly, to Lord Brougham, by knocking itself against his Lordship's knuckles, and, after a jingle, it fell. How these effects were produced neither Lord Brougham nor I could say, but I conjecture that they may be produced by machinery attached to the lower extremities of Mr. Home. (4.)

The public and mendacious denials of Sir David Brewster in the "Morning Advertiser," elicited no confirmation from Lord Brougham, though such confirmation, could he have obtained it, would have been most acceptable to Sir David. Lord Brougham's final views on spiritualism are indicated by himself in the following passage which concludes his Lordship's preface to a work entitled "The Book of Nature," by Mr. Charles O. Groom Napier, F.C.S., published in 1870:—"There is but one question I would ask the author: Is the spiritualism of this work foreign

Digitized by Microsoft®

to our materialistic, manufacturing age?—No; for amidst the varieties of mind which divers circumstances produce, are found those who cultivate man's highest faculties;—to these the author addresses himself. But even in the most cloudless skies of scepticism I see a rain-cloud,—if it be no bigger than a man's hand, it is Modern Spiritualism."

I hope that the Editor of Lord Brougham's memoirs will fairly give to the world his Lordship's letters containing the account of the *séance* at Cox's Hotel. Although Lord Brougham, at the special request of Sir David Brewster, conveyed by telegraph, abstained from publishing these letters, he was not capable of yielding to his further request to come forward with a confirmation of Sir David's mendacious letter of October, 1855.

I also desire to add to Mr. Coleman's remark that Mr. Cox was an intelligent and much respected gentleman, my own grateful tribute to the memory of a kind friend, and a steadfast and undaunted defender of the truth. Such have I ever found the late Mr. Cox, not only in his relations towards myself, but towards all others so far as came within the range of my own observation.

The "Spectator" says, on the correspondence with Sir David, printed in the appendix to my former volume:—

"Next we must say that the correspondence with Sir David Brewster is not decisive on either side, but that, as far as we can see, there *is* a certain amount of disingenuousness in Sir David's letters. It seems established by the clearest evidence that he felt and expressed, at and immediately after his *séances* with Mr. Home, a wonder and almost awe, which he afterwards wished to explain away; and the suppression of Lord Brougham's half-promised testimony as to the first *séance* in question, though challenged by Mr. Home, is on the whole unfavourable to Sir David, as it might be presumed that Lord Brougham would support his friend's testimony as

Digitized by Microsoft®

far as possible. Nor does the passage-at-arms between Sir David Brewster and Mr. T. A. Trollope concerning the subsequent *séance* at Ealing, seem to us quite creditable to Sir David. If we may trust Mr. Trollope (uncontradicted by Sir David Brewster) there also Sir David had testified to facts which on reconsideration, he modified to square with a theory subsequently elaborated. We say this, though disbelieving entirely the genuineness of all phenomena of this sort, simply on the evidence of Sir David Brewster's own letters and that of the other witnesses of two *séances* which he criticised. The controversy is not of any great importance one way or the other; still justice to this celebrated medium obliges us to admit that on the face of published correspondence, the hero of science does not acquit himself as we could wish or expect."

I am now also enabled to produce another independent witness in this case, namely, the late Earl of Dunraven, who has given me the following:—

"I was so struck with what Sir David Brewster—with whom I was well acquainted—had himself told me, that it materially influenced me in determining to examine thoroughly into the reality of the phenomena. I met him one day on the steps of the Athenæum; we got upon the subject of table-turning, &c.; he spoke most earnestly, stating that the impression left on his mind from what he had seen, was, that the manifestations were to him quite inexplicable by fraud, or by any physical laws with which we were acquainted, and that they ought to be fully and carefully examined into."

The following letter which was received by Mr. J. S. Rymer, shows the effect produced by Sir David Brewster's account at first.

"Sir,

"In consequence of a very remarkable account given by Sir David Brewster of the extraordinary powers

Digitized by Microsoft®

of Mr. Home, together with two or three friends, I am anxious to have an interview with him. If he can make it convenient to come to my house, No. 80, Eaton Square, on Thursday or Saturday next, at 2 o'clock, I should be glad to make an appointment for either of those days. I am given to understand that although Mr. Home does not exhibit his powers for money, that he does not refuse to accept a moderate gratuity from those who have the opportunity of witnessing his powers;* this of course I and my friends shall be happy to present to him, and we shall be much obliged to you to inform us what amount we may offer him, and in what way we may do so without doing violence to his feelings,

I remain, Sir,

"80, Eaton Sq. "Your obedient servant,
"July 2, 1855." "EDWARD BULLER."

As Father A. de Ponlevoy, in his biography of the Père de Ravignan, has denied my having been on intimate terms with the good father, and as, notwithstanding my challenge to him to produce evidence, he has never in any way justified his attack on me by the production of a single document, or of a solitary witness to the truth of his assertions, I might have left his attack now untouched; but as he continues to maintain his unsupported assertions, I think it advisable to print the following letters from the excellent Père de Ravignan, which fully testify to the cordial relations that existed between us:—

"Mon bien cher Enfant, Etes vous malade? Faites le moi savoir. J'irai près de vous; car il y a trop longtemps que je ne vous ai vu. Aujourd'hui, toute la journée, demain Jeudi, et apres demain jusqu' à midi, vous me trouveriez sûrement.

"Vous savez que je vous aime tendrement en N. S.,
"X. DE RAVIGNAN, S. J.

"Paris, Mercredi, 28 Janvier, 1857.

"Ne sortez-pas si vous êtes souffrant."

* An error; no sitting followed this note.

Digitized by Microsoft ®

"Mon cher Enfant, Je vous esperais hier matin. Etes vous plus souffrant? Aujourd'hui venez. Vous savez combien je vous aime en N. S.

Peut-être sortirai-je pour un malade, du 11h à midi.

"X. DE RAVIGNAN, S. J.

"Mercredi."

"Jeudi.

"Mon bien cher Enfant, J'envoie savoir de vos nouvelles; j'espere qu'elles seront bonnes. Demain Vendredi venez, si vous pouvez sortir, me voir avant 11h du Matin. Si non je vous attendrai Samedi.

"Je vous benis: soyez fidèle et soumis a l'église; vivez de la foi, et de la grace de N. S. Tout le reste, oubliez-le—adieu. Tout à vous,

"X. de R."

In the letters from Dr. Robert Chambers, allusion is made to the late Miss Catherine Sinclair, sister of the venerable Archdeacon Sinclair, a lady with whom it was a privilege to be acquainted. She was one of the early witnesses of the phenomena of spiritualism, and the following letters, addressed to me at different times, show what interest she felt in the subject:—

"DEAR SIR, "Saturday.

"In my haste last night, I left a much-valued acquisition, which will long and often be seen in my possession hereafter. Pray give the bearer that admirable photograph, which you so very kindly presented to me. The message of last night was most marvellous! The tempest-tossed ship and the beautiful expression of thankfulness that the storms of life are over—what consolation! I live with those who have heard, from my near relative, Mrs. Hope Johnstone, a very detailed account of her experience, and also Mr. Grant's, of the "Advertiser"; but people cannot long resist conviction, seconded by manifestations so pleasing and elevating as those of last night. I merely relate what I have myself witnessed, and all become at once

Digitized by Microsoft®

desirous to share in such revelations. Our circle last night, *when diminished*, was very effective! I ought to have told you beforehand about Mr. Howitt, but had no intention of trespassing on your kindness by bringing him, as I believe he had sailed in Lord Yarborough's yacht to Madeira, but he returned unexpectedly for a day. He is engaged to my niece, who accompanied me, the daughter of Sir George Sinclair, and she entreated me to take him. I had therefore no time to write and ask permission, he came so unexpectedly. I never would intrude any friend on you without special leave, seeing how persecuted you must be for admissions. With kind regards to Mrs. Home, Yours truly,

"C. SINCLAIR."

"DEAR SIR,

"It is several years since I saw Dr. Bell, and then only for one short consultation; therefore if he has quoted me as his friend, it must be on very slight evidence. I described one day to a young lady who is very ill, much that I had seen at Mrs. Milner Gibson's, and expressed my interest in it. Having told her that I had been prevented accepting your kind invitation for Tuesday, she may probably have mentioned it to Dr. Bell, who is her medical attendant. If I had wished to present him to you, I should certainly have written first to ask your permission; and should such an imposition be again attempted by any one, do not sanction it without my hand and seal. With best regards to Mrs. Home,

"Yours very truly,

"20th June." "CATHERINE SINCLAIR."

"DEAR SIR,

"This being Sunday, I *walked* from The Vicarage, Kensington, leaving my young charge better, and greatly do I long to bring him some day to see you. I am greatly embarrassed, however, by the opposition of my clerical brothers, and other relations, against all those

Digitized by Microsoft®

marvellous manifestations which will one day force themselves on universal conviction. All my family are behind the age on that mysterious subject, but I am glad to know that many talented men are become candid inquirers. As I have been long engaged to attend the marriage of Mr. Sandwith, the hero of Kars, next Tuesday, I must arrange to leave my patient; and that being your day for receiving visitors, I hope to call on Mrs. Home and you early, before I go to the wedding. My niece, Mrs. Hope Johnstone, who takes a deep interest in your investigations, will accompany me. I enclose a note from Colonel Knight Erskine, and if you can assist him—he has remained in London on purpose to see you. I often think gratefully of the kind interest you take in my young nephew. With kind regards, yours truly,

"27th May." "C. SINCLAIR."

"DEAR SIR,

"The kind and truly generous interest you felt in my young nephew's sudden calamity induces me to mention that his symptoms are already somewhat alleviated, though his three physicians think it may still be some time before the final result be certain. I sit for long hours beside him, and would have *greatly* wished to try mesmeric influence, but he is in the house of a clerical uncle, so strongly opposed *to progress* in these respects, that the subject cannot even be mentioned. People's minds are gradually opening, however, and a friend of mine, deep in the science of spiritualism, is extremely desirous to communicate with you. He is a landed proprietor in Scotland, and is in command of a regiment.

"I think you will find very few men more talented and agreeable than Major Knight Erskine, and I shall desire him, if you do not forbid him, to call on you next Tuesday about one, in hopes of conferring a mutual pleasure and benefit by making you acquainted. I return every night to town, but go early to my invalid again, as he has two

Digitized by Microsoft®

medical nurses who never leave him. One of the doctors says the complaint is *delirium tremens*, from *smoking cigars!*

"With best compliments to Mrs. Home,

"Yours very truly,

"Thursday." "C. SINCLAIR."

"18, Chesham Place, Belgrave Sq.

"13th July.

"DEAR SIR,

"Allow me to express my most sorrowful and cordial sympathy in the loss of your amiable and accomplished, and *much-loved* wife, so young, so good, and so suited to render you happy. I hope hereafter to hear from you that your own health has not suffered by your long and anxious attendance, as I witnessed your grief while here, in the apprehension of that sad event, which has now so mournfully terminated all your hopes and cares.

"Pray offer my sincere and respectful condolences to the distinguished relatives of my lamented young friend, Mrs. Home.

"With kindest regards,

"Yours very truly,

"CATHERINE SINCLAIR."

Another of the early inquirers, also alluded to by the late Dr. Robert Chambers was the late Professor De Morgan, concerning whom the following correspondence appeared in the "Spiritual Magazine" for January, 1869, which completely destroys all doubt as to his belief in the reality of the Phenomena.

"To the Editor of the 'Spiritual Magazine.'

"SIR,—As I am not in the habit of taking anything for granted, without what appear to me to be adequate reasons for so doing;—and, as I was not satisfied with the bare assertion that Professor De Morgan, the eminent living mathe-

Digitized by Microsoft®

matician, had really lent the sanction of his great name to these so-called delusions (of modern spiritualism), I some months back wrote him a letter on the subject of the book 'From Matter to Spirit,' published anonymously in 1863, and received from him the following reply;—

"'91, Adelaide Road, N. W.
'April 3rd, 1868.

"'A. B. Tietkins, Esq.

"'Sir,—It never has been any secret that the book 'From Matter to Spirit' was written by *my wife*, and the *preface* by *myself*.

"'For the last two years, I think, Longman has advertized our names. I vouch, of course, for the facts mentioned in detail at the end of the preface; but there are some in the book of the truth of which my knowledge is personal. And of nearly all I can testify that I heard them long before they were printed, and that they did not *grow*. "'Yours faithfully,

"'A. De Morgan.'

"So then here we have a living philosopher who tells us, after fifteen years of investigation of these phenomena, and patient consideration of their bearing, 'I am perfectly convinced that I have both seen and heard in a manner, which should make unbelief impossible, things *called* spiritual, which cannot be taken by a rational being to be capable of explanation by imposture, coincidence, or mistake. So far I feel the ground firm under me.'

"Such evidence as this, in connection with that of Mr. Varley, Mr. Wallace, and a host of other scientific witnesses, is very significant of the fact that although Professor De Morgan's did not grow in the telling, spiritualism is growing apace.

"A. B. Tietkens."

The following items of evidence in my favour may also

Digitized by Microsoft®

be given here as they appeared in the "Spiritual Magazine."

"The War Correspondent of the 'Daily Telegraph' (Mr. Kingston) in a letter to that Journal of October 31st, 1870, writing from Versailles, says:—'Among our party was Mr. Daniel Home, the celebrated Spiritualist, whom the King promptly recognized, and addressed very kindly —reminding him of the wonders that he (Mr. Home) had been the means of imparting to him, and inquiring about 'the spirits' in by no means a sceptical tone. We may add that the King said to Mr. Home that 'he had told many of his friends of the wonderful manifestations he had seen in Mr. Home's presence: his friends did not believe him; but the facts were true for all that.'"

Mr. J. M. Peebles, the United States Consul, in a lecture on his recent travels in Europe, delivered at Buttle Breek, near Chicago, and reported in the "Present Age" of September 3rd, 1870, makes the following statement:—

"While in England I dined with John Bright, when transpired quite an earnest conversation upon the subject of spiritualism. He said he had witnessed some of D. D. Home's manifestations. They were wonderful. He could attribute them to no cause except it be the one alleged, that of intelligent, disembodied spirits. 'But,' he added, with due caution, 'I do not say that this is so, but if it be true, it is the strongest tangible proof we have of immortality."

In the autumn of 1863, while at Dieppe, I met my friend, Mrs. Milner Gibson, one afternoon on the parade there. In the course of conversation she said, "Do you know that Dr. Elliottson is in Dieppe at present?" "Is he?" I replied. "I should like to be introduced to him." Mrs. Milner Gibson expressed surprise, but undertook to introduce me, and a few minutes afterwards we observed him on a seat. I was introduced to him, and said, "Dr. Elliottson, you have said and written very hard things of

Digitized by Microsoft®

me. Now don't you think it was very wrong for an old man like you to make such accusations as you have done against me, and to call a man an impostor, of whom you knew nothing whatever? If you like to know something of me, and to investigate the subject of spiritualism I shall be happy to see you at Mrs. Milner Gibson's this evening, and to give you every opportunity of testing what you see." He came, and saw so much that he was convinced of the truth of spiritualism. On the next day he called on me, and said, "What I witnessed last evening was wonderful and convincing, but it is too much for me to change suddenly the convictions of seventy years. I must ask you to let me come again, and bring a young friend with me." I agreed readily, and that evening he came accompanied by the two young Messrs. Symes. The fullest use was made by the gentlemen of their powers of observing and testing what they witnessed, and the result was that Dr. Elliottson was perfectly convinced. On his decease in the year 1868, a short memoir appeared in the "Morning Post," from which I give the following:—

"We have to record the decease, a day or two since, of one of the most remarkable scientific men of the century, who attained to the highest rank of the medical profession, and who was held in the greatest esteem for the daring and successful character of his innovations, and yet who, after living down and conquering aspersions cast on him, has lived long enough to be almost forgotten in the busy round of life. Dr. Elliottson was born somewhere about the year 1785, and studied at St. Thomas's and Guy's Hospitals. He was one of the first physicians to adopt the stethoscope in the diagnosis of lung and heart diseases. In the course of his practice at University College Hospital certain phenomena developed themselves in the cases of two young girls named Okey, and Elliottson was thus led to investigate mesmerism, and with his characteristic boldness and love of truth he published the results fearlessly. He was at this time enjoying as large a practice

Digitized by Microsoft®

at the West End as had ever been the lot of any physician. The result of his bold utterance of the truth was that his learned brethren persecuted him, and his practice fell off to the extent of £5,000 per annum, and in 1838, he was obliged to resign his professorship. His practice, however, rose in time till it was larger than before, and he became noted for his mesmeric knowledge, which he cultivated assiduously. He continued through good and evil report to publish the results of his experiments, and established the 'Zoist,' which he maintained for twelve years, the volumes of which form a history of this branch of science. He was founder and president of the Phrenological Society, and was president of the Royal Medical and Chirurgical Society of London. In 1849 he founded the Mesmeric Hospital, which has been a great blessing to many. During the greater part of his life he was an unbeliever, and while investigating mesmerism sneered at the accounts which he heard of spiritualistic phenomena, and denounced all mediums as impostors. He also wrote an elaborate treatise denying the existence of an immortal soul, and arguing that the Hebrew word 'nephesh,' translated 'soul,' had no other meaning than 'life.' In the year 1863, he was at Dieppe, and was introduced to Mr. D. D. Home, who told him he had acted wrongly in calling him an impostor when he really knew nothing of him. He then spent some time in investigating the phenomena of Spiritualism aided by the sons of his friend Dr. Symes. The result was that he expressed his conviction of the truth of the phenomena, and became a sincere Christian, whose handbook henceforth was his Bible. Sometime after this he said he had been living all his life in darkness, and had thought there was nothing in existence but the material; but he now had a firm hope which he trusted he would hold while on earth."

The "Spiritual Magazine" says:—"We may add to the foregoing notice, that not only was Dr. Elliottson for the greater part of his life—until he became a Spiritualist

Digitized by Microsoft®

—an unbeliever in revelation, but a Materialist of the most uncompromising and determined type,—the acknowledged head of that school of Physiology of which Lawrence and Engledue were the champions—which regards man as a merely corporeal being,—the faculties of the mind as synonymous with functions of the brain, and in what is usually regarded as evidence of his spiritual nature sees only the results of cerebral action. These views he set forth with great force in his elaborate work on "Human Physiology;' and they were eagerly caught up by the atheistic secular party in this country, and reproduced in lectures, articles, and tracts; and his name (which since he became a spiritualist they appear to have almost forgotten) was constantly in their mouths as that of an eminent authority on the subject. When modern spiritualism was introduced into this country, Dr. Elliottson was one of the sturdiest and most scornful of its opponents. Not only did he denounce it in the "Zoist," but he gave a series of wood-cuts in that journal to accompany the text, showing how the 'rappings' were effected. On this question of spiritualism, he joined issue with, and separated himself from his old friend and colleague in mesmerism, and in the establishment and management of the "Zoist"—Dr. Ashburner; to whom it must have been a source of great satisfaction after years of estrangement, that Dr. Elliottson's conviction of the truth of spiritualism was the means of re-establishing their former intimacy and friendship.

Spiritualism was not with Dr. Elliottson a conviction barren of results. It revolutionized the philosophy of a lifetime, as he was always ready to avow, bitterly lamenting the misdirected efforts he had made, however conscientiously, in the promulgation of materialistic principles. He became a thoroughly changed man, and changed in all respects for the better. Humbled by the recollection of past errors, his nature became softened, his demeanour more gentle, and he bore his losses and sufferings with patience and fortitude.

Digitized by Microsoft®

"Some of our correspondents have expressed doubts of the efficacy of prayer. Dr. Elliottson affirmed that he could no longer entertain any question of it, as he had personal and constant evidence of the efficacy of prayer in his own experience.

"To those who question as to the strength of evidence which spiritualism presents to the scientific investigator, or as to its origin and effects, this brief record may be useful. Let the tree be judged by its fruits."

The following letter appeared in "Human Nature," November 1, 1870:—

"SIR,—I have been informed that doubt has been expressed as to Dr. Elliottson ever having become a believer in spiritualism; and, as I happen to be acquainted with certain circumstances connected with his being so, I trespass on your space in order to remove that doubt.

"I was happy in seeing much of Dr. Elliottson from the commencement of and during his brave combat in defence of the genuineness of the phenomena of animal magnetism—(I always regretted his adoption of the term, mesmerism, thinking the original one so much more expressive of their nature)—and I am quite aware of his utter inability to receive the truth of the manifestations which he witnessed when Mrs. Hayden was in this country, and which he tried to account for by one of the many absurd hypotheses, rife then, but now completely exploded. He consequently became violently opposed to all those who admitted the genuineness of them, and avowed their belief in communication with the spirits of the departed. So strong was his honest disbelief on this subject that, when his friend, Dr. Ashburner, became one of the staunchest advocates of its truth, he broke off all intercourse with him, nor did he hesitate to write and speak of it and him in severe terms, and on the worse than folly of uniting in such a gross imposition on the

Digitized by Microsoft®

gullibility of mankind. This continued for some years, until being at Dieppe, Mrs. Milner Gibson induced him to join in a *séance* with Mr. Home, I believe in more than one, the result being that he was firmly convinced, not only of the existence of the spiritual world, but of the power to communicate with the spirits of departed friends therein; and, with the perfect courageous honesty of his nature, promised to make his convictions known on his return to London. This he did; and I well remember a conversation with him, in which he said, '*What* shall I do with my books?' admitting that many of them were of a kind which would promote a disbelief in the truth he had so happily attained to.

"When he returned to London, one of the first things he did was to see a mutual friend of his and Dr. Ashburner's, and to express his regret that 'he should have treated such a man in such a manner,' asking if the friend thought Dr. A. 'would ever forgive him.'

"On the same morning Dr. Ashburner happened to call on the friend, and, learning the above, immediately went to 37, Conduit Street, and, in Dr. Elliottson's absence, left his card. He had not been long at home when Dr. Elliottson entered his room, with his hands before his face, saying, 'Can you forgive me?'

"This was followed, as those who knew the man may well imagine, by a perfect reconciliation, honourable in the highest degree to both.

"In one of my latest interviews with him, he expressed the great happiness his later convictions had brought him, and looked forward to the life hereafter with calm confidence. The leading characteristic of his mind, in addition to his high intellectual development, was the perfectly honest search after truth. This, when it is perfect, is sure to be rewarded by success, sooner or later.

"In his case, on this subject, it was late. May all those, who are equally honest searchers, find it, even if as late as he did.—Yours, &c. H. C."

Digitized by Microsoft®

A remarkable prophetic incident came to my knowledge in 1863, by the following letters, which I leave to tell their own story:—

"Boston, May 17, 1863.

"My Dear Daniel,—I can most fully sympathize with you in your sorrow, having recently met with a great bereavement myself. My daughter Mary (Mrs. Higginson) was taken with bleeding from the lungs, and in eight weeks she passed from earth-life to the inner world. She died of rapid consumption. While John has been ill for three years, he is still with us, awaiting humbly and patiently his summons and release. He looks like an angel, and is like one for his goodness.

"Mary was my youngest daughter, and she had a gentle, lovely temper and disposition, that twined her close round my heart. She was to me all that a daughter could be, and my loss is very great, but I shall not have very long to stay away from her. During your last visit to us, at one of our *séances*, you asked me for paper and pencil. I gave them to you, and you then asked for wafers to seal up your writing. The paper was sealed up very carefully, handed to me, and you told me to keep it till the spirits made it known that it was to be opened. I kept it thus seven years or more, and then having a good opportunity, I inquired if I might open it. The answer was that I had better not, as the contents were not what I might like. After a while I asked again, and was told that if I were so desirous I might open it. I therefore broke the seals, and found the following words:—'Mary will be the *first* to leave earth. Grieve not. All will be well with her. It may be years.'

"You may judge of my feelings at this announcement, and when she was taken with the hemorrhage I felt that she would be the first, although for weeks we had almost been daily feeling that John would leave us. We laid her body away last Tuesday, just five days ago, and John breathes yet. Yours, &c.,

"D. D. Home, Esq. A. S. Jarves."

Digitized by Microsoft®

"Boston, July 5th.

"DEAR DANIEL,—I have postponed writing you since John passed away. His spirit was released from the body on the 21st of May, just eleven days after Mary had left us. Strange to say John did not ask to see his sister as we did not tell him what a *surprise* was awaiting him there. George (his spirit brother) told us that he had impressed John not to think of Mary, and now John tells us that when he met his sister he thought it must only be a vision. Yours, &c.,

"D. D. Home, Esq. A. S. JARVES."

An equally remarkable prophetic incident occurred to me in the autumn of 1863, while at Dieppe. A Russian gentleman asked me if I ever saw a vision in a crystal, to which I replied no. He said, Look in this, and tell me if you see anything. I took it up; and on looking at it, to my astonishment, I saw a crowd, and in the crowd a man who was assassinated, in the act of falling forward from his chair. I said, "That is Abraham Lincoln, and within the year he will be assassinated."

I do not attempt to explain these things, I can only give the facts.

The following incidents in my experience, I related at a conference in London some time since, and I give them as reported in the "Spiritual Magazine:"—

"At one of the London Conferences on Spiritualism, Mr. D. D. Home narrated the following experiences:—Some eighteen years ago, when quite a boy, he was travelling in a railway carriage, when a gentleman, son of Professor Wayland, of Brown University, asked if he was Mr. Home; on replying that he was, the gentleman said he owed him an apology; on asking why, he said he had called Home an impostor, and owed him an apology for doing so. The gentleman said he had occasion once to call on a friend, when he found Home in his office in a trance and blindfolded. As he hesitated about entering,

Digitized by Microsoft®

Home pointing to the door said, 'That is Frank, tell him to come, his sister Caroline is here.' He told them he never had a sister Caroline, and that it was all humbug. He went home and said to his father that he would be sorry to hear 'Mr. —— had taken up with spiritualism, and had that fellow Home in his office blindfolded; and, only fancy! he told me I had had a sister Caroline.' His father said, 'And don't you really know you had a sister of that name?' 'No,' he replied, 'of course not.' 'Then,' returned his father, 'you had; she was born just before yourself, but only lived a few hours, and during that time was christened Caroline; so Home was right. Mr. Home said that everybody had their own ideas of dignity, and sometimes the plain truth is withheld for the sake of upholding it. An old maiden lady once entered the house where he was staying, while he was in a trance; she was persuaded to remain, and during the *séance* she asked Home whilst in the trance what were the last words her mother had said on her death-bed; if he could tell her that she would believe. Home replied, 'Puss, puss, poor pussy.' The lady started, turned pale, and said he was right; those were the very last words used, but she thought them so undignified, that she had never told anybody of them."



Digitized by Microsoft®

CHAPTER III.

Expulsion from Rome. Discussion in House of Commons.

WHILE at Dieppe I made some essays in the art of sculpture which led to my removing to Rome, where one of the remarkable events of my life occurred. This was related in the "Spiritual Magazine," with the following introduction:—

"Another curious 'incident of his life' has just happened to Mr. Home, and is related by the *Times* in a letter from 'our own correspondent' at Rome, where Mr. Home has now been for some time studying as a sculptor. During his late visit to Dieppe, he had suddenly shown considerable talent as a sculptor. His first effort was highly approved, and he was advised to devote himself to the art, and for that purpose he went to Rome in the month of October last, and has since been actively working there as a student. It is now decided that he has great talent, and he is making rapid progress, with the intention of shortly commencing the practice of his new profession at Paris, where he intends establishing a studio. We give the narrative of the little episode which happened to him in the Eternal City, as it appeared in the 'Times' of the 12th of January. It is quite a *bijou* in its way, and an instance of the way in which affairs go on under the

Digitized by Microsoft®

guidance of 'God's vicegerent upon earth,' and the precious gentleman who holds the keys of St. Peter.

(From our own Correspondent.)

"Rome, Jan. 6.

"Perhaps the most exciting incident of the week is that Mr. Home, of spiritualism notoriety, has been ordered to leave Rome in three days; and that I may not err in my statement of the fact which has occasioned great sensation, I give you a report of the proceedings in his own words."

I give in lieu of the "Times" report, the full extract from my diary.

I arrived at Rome on the 15th November, 1863, for the purpose of studying sculpture.

On the 2nd of January, 1864, I received, at five o'clock in the evening, a letter requiring my attendance at the office of the chief Police Station. Feeling sure that this summons could be connected with nothing but spiritualism, I could not help thinking how sad it was that men who ought to be more enlightened should treat as a crime a matter that the Church ought rather to encourage and support. In order, however, to avoid any disturbance, I determined to do as was required of me, and so, with a companion who kindly consented to accompany me, at half-past eleven on January 3rd I presented myself at the Palazzo-Citerio. We were shown into an ante-room, where there were some straw chairs, but no fire, and as the roof was covered with snow we found it very cold. After waiting for more than half-an-hour, I began to get a little impatient, and, calling a servant, I asked him if it was the custom to treat in this manner people who had been summoned; and told him to warn those who had desired my presence that I would wait no longer. After a short absence he returned with excuses for my detention, and saying that M. Pasqualonni was ready to receive me. We were shown into a large room, where that gentleman was seated at an office table with drawers. The apart-

Digitized by Microsoft®

ment was scantily furnished—a few chairs, a plaster-of-paris bust of the Pope; an engraving of the Holy Virgin was suspended behind M. Pasqualonni, in the frame of which some visiting cards were placed.

Upon my entrance Mons. P. bowed to me, and motioned me to seat myself opposite to him; the friend who accompanied me sat at the end of the table, on the left of Mons. P., who commenced his remarks with—

Q. You are Mr. D. Dunglas Home?—*A.* Yes, sir, and here is my passport.

Q. (Without taking it) Very well, I must ask you some questions.—*A.* For my part, sir, I am ready to answer you.

Q. Were you born in Scotland?—*A.* Yes, sir.

Q. Are you thirty-seven years old?—*A.* No, sir, I am only thirty years old.

Q. But, sir, you are thirty-seven.—*A.* No, sir; I was born in 1833; next March I shall be in my thirty-first year.

Q. (Taking a paper from a drawer, and looking at it) According to my notes you ought to be thirty-seven.—*A.* I am sorry that I am unable to corroborate your information; but I am only thirty years old.

Q. Your father's name?—*A.* William.

Q. Your mother's?—*A.* Elizabeth.

Q. Her maiden name?—*A.* McNeil. (Here I interrupted him with a request that I might be furnished with pencil and paper.)

Q. For what purpose?—*A.* To write.

Q. To write what?—*A.* I am a free man, and should wish to preserve questions and answers of such great importance.

Q. (Handing me a sheet of paper and a red pencil.) How many times have you been in Rome?—*A.* This is my third visit.

Q. When and of what duration were the other visits?—*A.* In 1856, I remained here two months, then it was

Digitized by Microsoft®

that I became a Roman Catholic; in 1858, I passed three weeks here; and upon this occasion I have been here since the 15th November.

Q. Nay, you have been here since the 1st of November?—*A.* Here is my passport, which will show you that I have been here only since the 15th.

Q. Is it your intention to remain a long time here?—*A.* No, sir, I propose in April to return to Paris.

Q. Have you a house there?—*A.* No, sir.

Q. What was your object in coming to Rome?—*A.* For my health and to study sculpture.

Q. What was your religion before 1856?—*A.* Protestant.

Q. Have you published any works—how many—and under what titles?—*A.* "Incidents in My Life."

Q. Was the book published in Paris by Dentu?—*A.* It was.

Q. You say that you are a medium, that you become entranced, and that you see spirits?—*A.* Yes, sir, I have said so, and it is true.

Q. And you hold communications with spirits?—*A.* When they think proper.

Q. How do you summon them?—*A.* I do not summon them, they manifest themselves of their own accord.

Q. How do they manifest themselves?

I was about to answer, "Sometimes in one way, sometimes in another," when raps were made upon the table close to him and far from me; he asked me in a tone of great astonishment the cause of these noises. My companion answered him by saying: "These are the spirits, and it must be evident to you that Mr. Home has no volition in the matter." "*Spirits!*" replied M. Pasqualonni, looking all about the table more and more astonished: then he said, "Let us continue our examination. Proceed."

Q. So you consider your gift as a gift of nature?—*A.* No, I consider it a gift of God.

Digitized by Microsoft®

Q. Since the year 1856 have you never exercised your power?—*A.* Neither before nor since, seeing that I am passive in these manifestations, which are spontaneous.

Q. In your opinion what is the object of these manifestations?—*A.* To assure sceptics of the immortality of the soul, and to afford heavenly consolation.

Q. You relate in your work on miracles performed by you, amongst others, cases of cure?—*A.* These cures are truly miracles.

Q. How did you accomplish them?—*A.* I know nothing about it. I am but an instrument.

Q. You have given *séances* in France, England, and Russia?—*A.* At friendly assemblies met for the purpose, manifestations sometimes occur. But why do you ask me all this? My book answers this question in the affirmative; all persons therein named are prepared to corroborate what I have printed, and I will maintain, even at the risk of my life, the truth of what my book asserts.

My friend, considering me a little fatigued, requested M. Pasqualonni to postpone the examination to another day, but I replied that I preferred finishing it then.

Q. You say in your work that articles of furniture move; why does not this table start off for a walk? Do you see spirits when you are awake or asleep?—*A.* In both states. With regard to the cases of locomotion you speak of, they occur sometimes, but not by any will of mine own. (As I said this, a cracking noise was heard on the table which moved slightly. M. Pasqualonni looking about, said in a troubled voice, "Let us continue.")

Q. Did you not say in your book that your mother was a medium?—*A.* Yes, sir, and my son is also.

Q. What is the age of your son?—*A.* Four years and a half.

Q. Where is he?—*A.* At Malvern.

Q. Where is Malvern?—*A.* In England.

Q. Has he a nurse?—*A.* Yes, sir.

Digitized by Microsoft®

Q. Is she a Catholic?—*A.* No, sir, she belongs to the Greek Church.

Q. With whom is your son?—*A.* With Dr. Gully, one of my friends.

Q. Is Dr. Gully a Catholic?—*A.* No, sir.

At this point my friend began speaking in a low voice with M. Pasqualonni, and I learned that the subject of their conversation was my expulsion from Rome. Then I demanded that the order for it should be made in writing, which was done, and I was told that within three days I must leave Rome.

Q. Do you consent to do so?—*A.* (Rising up.) Certainly not, for, having infringed no law, my consenting to go would look as if I had committed something of which I was ashamed. I expect to find this the cause of much scandal before I go. I warn you beforehand, and upon my leaving you I shall at once seek advice from my consul.

Then he said to me, "I hope, Mr. Home, that you will not refuse me your hand." I gave him my hand, at the same time saying, that I was sorry to see him the instrument of authority such as this. I went to my consul and told him what had happened; it being Sunday, nothing could be done, but the next day he promised to see the governor of Rome. I then betook myself to a person of considerable importance, who was kind enough to go immediately to Monseigneur Matteuci, which cardinal, in a long conversation, told my friend that he had nothing to say against me except on the matter of sorcery.

The next day, at twelve o'clock, the English consul went to see the Monseigneur, who said to him that if I was willing to sign an engagement, in which I would promise not to give any *séances*, I might remain in Rome. I lost no time in writing the following declaration:—

"I give my word as a gentleman that, during my stay in Rome, I will have no *séance*, and that I will avoid, as much as possible, all conversations upon spiritualism.

"DANIEL DUNGLAS HOME.

"Palazzi-Paoli, 4 January, 1864."

Digitized by Microsoft®

My consul, not satisfied with this, wished me to make known why I had come to Rome and why I was anxious to remain, then I wrote on the same paper :—

"I have only come to Rome for my health and to study art, therefore I should wish to be left alone.

"D. D. HOME."

This document was despatched to Monseigneur Matteuci, and for the remainder of the week I heard no more on the subject, until Saturday afternoon, at 5.30, when I received the following letter :—

"M. Daniel Dunglas Home will have the great kindness to present himself at the passport office between six and eight o'clock, provided with his passport."

I begged of my friend, who had accompanied me on the previous occasion, to perform once more the like service, and we both of us went to the Palazzo-Citerio at a quarter before six. I went to the office of M. Pegallo, who, after having taken and looked at my passport, said to me :—"But, sir, you ought first to have visited your consul." "For what purpose!" was my reply. "That he might *viser* your passport, as you intend to go." I answered that I had no intention of leaving. Then he said, looking at the passport, "In that case your passport is quite correct: with such a passport you can remain a whole year." I bowed and thanked him. The next morning, at a quarter before ten, one of the sons of the mistress of the house where I lodged entered my studio in a state of alarm, and said :—"Sir, there is a policeman awaiting you at your house." I replied that he might make himself quite comfortable at my place, for I had no intention of returning home just yet; and that if he wished to see me he must come to my studio. Ten minutes afterwards the man came and said that he was obliged to seek me in consequence of my not having the preceding day appeared at the passport office, where I

Digitized by Microsoft®

had been summoned. I replied that not only had I been there, but that I had been accompanied by a friend. He then said, "Your friend had been, but you had not." Upon this, with difficulty keeping my temper, I answered, "Come along, the same person will accompany me again:" which he did. Going to the same apartment, I went to the same desk, and gave my passport to M. Pegallo, who said, "I was waiting for you till eight o'clock yesterday, and you did not come." I answered him that I had come at a quarter before six, and that having to come twice I did not find it particularly gratifying.

Q. But you did not come?—*A.* I tell you I did come; you took my passport, and told me that I might remain a year. Now, say no more on that subject, don't lie unless your position requires that you should do so.

He said, "At three o'clock to-day you must leave Rome." "Very well. I have no intention, however, of going, and I do not mean to go." He replied, "You must by three o'clock be outside of the gates of Rome." I then said, "Do your duty; sign my passport." He signed it, gave it me back, and I went out to find my consul, who received me with feelings of suppressed rage, saying, "Why do you make promises to break them immediately after?" I asked him what he meant; he replied, that I had been playing the fool with M. Pasqualonni. I cried out angrily, "M. Severn, I have come to you as an English subject, and not to speak to you either as to my belief or the phenomena which happen through me, and if you had examined the matter you would know that they are independent of my will. I only require of you to do your duty as consul; any other advice is out of place, the more so that since my promise no manifestation has taken place, although in undertaking not to give *séances* I am unable to promise that no manifestations shall occur." He went to see the Governor of Rome, who told him that since I was unable to avoid having mani-

Digitized by Microsoft®

festations, I must not be allowed to remain longer in Rome. One of my friends called upon Monseigneur Matteuci (where I presented myself between four and five o'clock, without being received). He obtained permission for me to remain till Wednesday following. Learning that I resolved to depart on Monday, a great number of friends conducted me to the railway as a token of their sympathy.

"Such," says the "Times" correspondent, "is the report of a procedure which is eminently characteristic of the Pontifical Government. On Monday morning the British Consul saw Monseigneur Matteucci, the Governor of Rome, and complained that any British subject should be interfered with in consequence of his opinions. He stated that Mr. Home had conducted himself during his residence in Rome in a strictly legal and gentlemanly manner, and demanded that the obnoxious order should be rescinded. Monseigneur spoke of dangerous powers of fascination, of the prohibition by the Government of all the practices of the black art, and finally assented to Mr. Home's remaining, on condition of his entering into an engagement, through Mr. Severn, that he would desist from all communications with the spiritual world during his stay in Rome. An agreement to that effect was drawn up and signed by Mr. Home, who will henceforward abstain from all communication with the upper or lower world, as the case may be, during his residence in Rome. Less fortunate than Mr. Home has been a Dominican priest, who has been deprived of his curacy, I hear, for having read Mr. Home's book."

The "Spiritual Magazine" adds:—"If it were not for the refreshing and business-like style of the narrative, one could not imagine that such a scene could be enacted in this new year of our Lord, 1864, in any part of Europe. Probably, perhaps excepting Spain, there is no country, excepting that governed by the infallible and holy father, where such a lunatic act could be perpetrated. What a laugh the holy father's patron,

Digitized by Microsoft®

Napoleon, and Mr. Home will have over the old gentleman when next they meet! No wonder that French soldiers are required to prop up such an old fellow on both sides, to keep him out of the clutches of his loving subjects. The Pope's own recollections of having to escape from his own palace dressed up as a flunkey, behind one of his own carriages, seem to be quite lost upon him, and we wonder that all the Jeameses do not hold an indignation meeting, to protest against his having disgraced their cloth on that memorable occasion.

The most amusing part of the business is the rescinding of the order, on condition of Mr. Home entering into an engagement, that he would desist from all communications with the spiritual world during his stay in Rome! This reminds us of what occurred during the time that the miracles of healing were being carried out at St. Medard, in Paris, upon the multitudes who flocked to the tomb of the good Abbé François Paris. When the numbers became so great that the thoroughfare was stopped by them, some wag wrote upon the wall:

> "De par le roi, defense à Dieu
> De faire miracles en ce lieu!"

What was suggested as a witty piece of blasphemy, has now been done by the Pope, the Holy Father of the true Faith, the infallible head of the Church, and the lineal descendant of the Apostles, who preached and practised the spiritual religion which is based upon that supernaturalism, many instances of which have been marvellously elucidated and proved to a sceptical age, by the phenomena which occur in the presence of Mr. Home. At Rome then it is of all places in the world, where *De par le pape, defense à Dieu, de faire miracles en ce lieu*, but perhaps it is the place of all others now least likely for any spiritual developments. The scandalous frauds, and immoralities, impostures, cruelties, child snatchings, and bigotry of this poor priest-ridden place, make it little likely that any true spiritual developments could find favour

Digitized by Microsoft ®

within its walls. It is a country where superstition is made a trade to bring pence to its mendicant priests, and where a small proportion of true spiritual phenomena has been eked out by nine-tenths of impostures, in the shape of winking Madonnas, bleeding pictures, and chapels of our Lady of Loretto, with the Pope himself sitting in the veritable chair of St. Peter, which an exploring Englishman, on removing a part of its covering, found to be of ivory covered with Moorish characters. When a case of common mediumship happens among them, they are so ignorant of its nature, that if a young girl in a trance or magnetic state sees the Virgin Mary, straightway Europe is canvassed for money to raise a chapel on the spot. Truly the days are past for spiritual manifestations in Rome, when all the great and good saints, as they call them, are disowned by a Pope who forbids God to perform again the miracles which were common to all of them. Mr. Home is raised in the air, so were St. Francis, and St. Ignatius Loyola, and so was St. Theresa in the great square of St. Peter's in the presence of the Pope and assembled Rome. There is not one of the manifestations common to Mr. Home, but are to be seen fifty times repeated in the lives accredited by the church, of nearly all of its greatest saints, but now the Pope forbids that God should longer do miracles at Rome. If the Pope were other than a lunatic, he would have made Mr. Home a cardinal, and have retained him to have sittings twice a week at the Vatican, that by means of his manifestations, the belief in the possibility of the Romish miracles, might have some chance of being a little re-established, and rescued from the mass of fraud in which the true ones are justly lost. If Protestantism, which practically denies all spirituality in religion and in nature, had issued such an order as that of the Pope, we should not have been surprised. Our men of science and literature such as Brewster and the members of the Royal Society, will hardly be proud of their new coadjutor. They would not

Digitized by Microsoft®

agree on the reasons, but only in the conclusion of the venerable Father.

"We cannot but be thankful that such an event has occurred, as it will excite increased interest in the subject, and very great contempt for Popish incapacity and bigotry."

The following is from the "Spiritual Magazine" for February 1, 1864:—

"We have just received information from Mr. Home, that, notwithstanding the permission to remain in Rome on condition of having 'no connection with any other world,' this unwonted leniency was more than the authorities could bear, and a few days after, Mr. Home was definitely informed that he must quit the Holy City, on the ground of his being a sorcerer. After his first examination by the police, which was shortly reported in the 'Times,' the indignation of the upper classes in Rome was aroused, and many called upon him to express their sympathy; and now, when he received an order to quit Rome at once, his friends rallied round him, and with expressions of detestation of the Government proceeded with him to the railway station by which he left for Naples. Amongst those who so accompanied him was His Royal Highness the Count de Trani. His quitting was quite an ovation, and a public protest against the ignorant and pitiable barbarity of the spiritual head of the only true church.

"The Governor of Rome, upon being remonstrated with, and asked if there was anything against his character, replied that there was nothing, and that 'during the two months Mr. Home has been in Rome, *we have had him watched*, and we believe that his character is without blemish. We have also information from elsewhere to the same effect; but he *is a sorcerer* and cannot be permitted in Rome, and he must go.' For four weeks previous to his departure, the Roman Government kept back all his letters, and even yet they have not been delivered to him.

Digitized by Microsoft®

"Mr. Home is now therefore at Naples, where he has been received with great distinction. His arrival has been announced in the newspapers, and he has been elected an honorary member of the highest club there, and fêted by the residents, both English and native."

As bearing on this event I may be permitted to quote the following letter, which speaks for itself.

"Circular letter and ordinance of Monseigneur the Bishop of Algiers on the superstition called spiritualism.

"ARTICLE I.—The practice of spiritualism, or the evocation of the dead, is interdicted to all and every one in the diocese of Algiers.

"Article II.—The confessors shall refuse absolution to every one who does not renounce all participation, whether as a medium, as an adept, or as a simple witness, at *séances*, private or public, in short, at any operation whatever of spiritualism.

"Article III.—In all the towns and all the rural parishes of Algiers, where spiritualism has been introduced with some *éclat*, Messieurs the curés shall read publicly this letter from the pulpit the first Sunday after its reception. Besides this, they shall communicate everywhere in particular, according to the necessity,

"Done at Algiers, the 18th of August, 1863.

"+ Louis Antoine-Augustine, Bishop of Algiers.

"By command of Monseigneur:

"A. ANCELIN, Canon, Vicar-General."

After my return to England I wrote the following letter to Lord Palmerston:—

"MY LORD,

"Some months since I took up my residence in Rome for the purpose of pursuing my studies as a sculptor.

"Without having in any way infringed the laws of the place, I was expelled the territory at a very short notice,

Digitized by Microsoft®

on the pretext that I was a sorcerer, and that I had published a book in London.

"Having been put to great expense as well as inconvenience by my expulsion, I beg to submit the facts to your Lordship's notice, as the best means of obtaining redress.

"I have, &c., &c.,
"DANIEL DUNGLASS HOME."

"To the Right Honorable
"Viscount Palmerston, K.G., &c., &c., &c.
"Treasury."

Being referred to the Foreign Secretary, further correspondence ensued, which was terminated by the following letter:—

"Foreign Office,
"SIR, "April 16, 1864.

"I am directed by Earl Russell to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 9th instant, complaining of your expulsion from the Roman Territory; and I am to state to you, in reply, that his lordship is not prepared to make any representation to the Roman Government on the subject. "I am, Sir,

"Your most obedient humble Servant,
"D. D. Home, Esq. "A. H. LAYARD.
"Cox's Hotel, Jermyn Street."

In reference to this affair I received a letter from Monsieur A. Gautier, Consul for Greece in Rome, of which the following is a translation.

"Your departure hence has been the subject of many comments, which I have carefully traced, and I think you will be pleased to have an account of them; they will afford you amusement.

"Some have given out that you were a secret agent of England, others of the Emperor of the French, and some of Russia, but others have asserted that you were the familiar spy of the Ex-king of Naples, and gave as proof

Digitized by Microsoft®

your relations with Count de Trani, and M. Della Rocca. Hence you were held to mix in society only as an unavowed diplomatist, a dangerous man, having intimate understanding with so many courts; and you became properly suspected by the governments.

"But as this did not content all those moral minds who held that every one had a right to become in society an agent for this or that government, without deserving to be expelled for his opinions, a version of a different character has sprung up; and it has been said that you were compelled to leave for moral reasons. The book, the true cause, has been swamped beneath all these products of imagination.

"It is asserted that the advocate who questioned you was sensible of raps given while the interrogatory was proceeding, and that when he was told of this, he replied, 'Imagination, excitement; he had thought he heard them.'"

After a quotation from the "Memorial Diplomatique" of Paris, the letter concludes—

"It may be presumed that all these rumours and repetitions will not end here, but that the apostle of truth will one day speak or write concerning the facts which relate to him, and in such case he is hereby authorised and recommended to make known, even by means of his pen, the name of the official interpreter who was present at this very occurrence, and who like himself professes reverence for truth. This is a right appertaining to the victim, and which could not be denied to him, any more than truth could be falsified."

Having been recommended to follow up my application to the Foreign Secretary by having my case brought before the House of Commons, Mr. J. A. Roebuck kindly undertook to ask a question on the subject. I wrote to him as follows:—

Digitized by Microsoft®

"64, Jermyn St.
"St. James.

"DEAR SIR,

"I do indeed much regret all the trouble I am giving you: but at the same time I feel assured that your own high sense of justice and right is such that you will, I am sure, be patient with me. I submit the documents connected with my expulsion from Rome, and you will see that there is question of naught but my book and my belief as a spiritualist.

"The Papal party are now, as I am aware, doing all they can to have it said, that there were other grounds for my expulsion, but not one of them dares to come forward and, like a man, make the charge. There is, to my way of thinking, nothing so base as a dastardly attack on a man's moral character. I can well comprehend that they should feel heartily ashamed of what they term an infallible church having to expel from its states a man whose whole life is well known, and against whom naught could be said. But then it is a sad pity that they should have to resort to falsehood and calumny, to endeavour to palliate the ill usage already received. Some of them say that I did give *séances* in Rome. You will find in the letter marked No. 4, which is written to me by my old landlady with whom I lodged all the time I was in Rome, that she was not even aware of the singular powers I possess. In all common fairness I should consider this a fair refutation of the charge. Another charge is, that I was expelled as not an innocent character. I am willing to have every act of my life, not only during my stay in Rome, but elsewhere brought before the public, and will stand by their candid decision. Letter No. 1 is my first intimation to appear before them to be questioned. In No. 2 are the questions written by the gentleman who accompanied me, and you will see that there is not even an allusion to aught in my personal character. In No. 2, B., are the questions and answers prepared for print as a preface to the third edition of my book in France. No. 3 is a letter received from

Digitized by Microsoft®

the gentleman who was with me during my examination. This letter was received during my stay in Paris. No. 4 is the letter before alluded to. And now, dear sir, I can assure you that I feel very grateful for the trouble you have already taken. I only ask justice. I must add to all this, that Mr. Severn was, instead of being an aid to me, quite the contrary, and it is a wonder to me that an intelligent government could ever have placed any one in so important a position who is so little qualified to fill it. Mr. Severn knows nothing of international law, and is but too apt to speak of matters which do not in the least enter into his position. He, in the presence of Mr. Wreford the 'Times Correspondent,' said that several letters had been read to him by Monsignor Mattenci the contents of which he refused to divulge, but that the purports were such that he must refuse to do anything more for me. I then, in the presence of these two gentlemen, demanded to know if there was aught in the letters which would prevent his taking my hand as an Englishman and a gentleman. To this he at once said, No. Two hours after that I was told what the letters did contain, and it was only the same absurd story which is told every time I leave Paris, *i. e.* that I am sent away by command of the Emperor. Such tittle tattle as this ought to be avoided by an English consul.

"Any information you may require I will be only too happy to give. Again thanking you,

"Believe me, my dear Sir,

"Your most obedient,

"May 24, 1864." "D. D. Home."

"The Spiritual Magazine" for July, 1864, contains the following account of the discussion in the House:—

"As the readers of this journal will doubtless have seen that Mr. Home's expulsion from Rome has been made the subject of complaint and enquiry in the British House of Commons, it will not be out of place to make a record

Digitized by Microsoft®

here of so interesting an episode in the history of modern spiritualism. I extract the report as published in the 'Morning Star,' of the 31st of May last:

"'Mr. Roebuck rose to ask the Under-Secretary of State for Foreign Affairs whether any steps had been taken to obtain from the Papal Government redress for the injuries done to Mr. Home by that Government. The hon. gentleman said Mr. Home believed he had the power to call spirits, and he was what was publicly called a 'Spiritualist,' although he (Mr. Roebuck) did not exactly know what that meant. He did not believe in it, but that had nothing to do with the present case. Mr. Home he believed to be a man of perfectly good behaviour, and the question was whether he was to receive protection from the Government of England. The facts of the case were these. Mr. Home went to Rome to study his art, and he incurred considerable expense to carry out this object. Some time after he arrived there he received a notice from the head of the police requiring him to attend at the police-office. Mr. Home did so, when a number of questions was asked him. In the first place, the police official asked him his age, and Mr. Home gave a reply, and he was naturally a person that ought to know his own age. The official told him he was eight or ten years older, which Mr. Home denied. The signor then said, 'You have published a book in France and in England saying that certain spirits waited upon you.' Mr. Home admitted that he had done this. The signor said, 'Will you undertake that no spirits shall come to you while you are in Rome?' (Laughter.) Mr. Home said, 'No, I cannot do that; the spirits come to me of their own accord. I cannot answer for them; but this I will promise, that I will hold no *séance*, and I will do nothing to solicit their coming to me; and further, I will do nothing contrary to the laws of the city of Rome.' Upon this the signor gave him to understand that he should not be interrupted. Some time after this, the

Digitized by Microsoft®

second in command of the police sent for Mr. Home. Mr. Home went in company with the French Consul, but he found nobody at the police-office. When he got home, there came a peremptory note calling upon him to be at the police-office. Mr. Home went the second time, when the official said, 'You were not here yesterday at the hour at which you were required.' Mr. Home said, 'Yes, I was.' 'Well,' said the official, 'you must leave Rome in forty-eight hours.' Now this was the whole of the matter. (Hear, hear.) He (Mr. Roebuck) wished to know whether the Government would protect a British subject who had been treated in this way. Whatever might be the wonderful and mysterious power of Mr. Home, he ought to be protected as a British citizen. He observed the President of the Board of Trade in his place —(much laughter) but he (Mr. Roebuck) had no feeling for Mr. Home's profession, further than having a contempt for the whole thing; but still Mr. Home, being a British citizen, should be protected. He had great respect for the old gentleman at the head of the Papal Government—(a laugh)—and he wished that he might long live to enjoy himself; but England must protect her subjects. Mr. Home had been ignominiously expelled from Rome, after having incurred considerable expenses there, and when Earl Russell was asked what he would do, he said 'I will do nothing.' (Much laughter, caused by Mr. Roebuck imitating the voice and manner of the noble lord.) 'He asked the noble lord at the head of the Government to protect this unfortunate gentleman against the tyranny of the Roman Government.'

"'Mr. Layard regretted that Mr. Home should have placed himself in a position to lead the Papal Government to call upon him to leave Rome, but he appeared to have infringed on their rules. ['No, no,' from Mr. Roebuck.] Well, the Roman Government thought that he carried on intercourse with spirits, and they called upon him to leave Rome in consequence. He (Mr. Layard) gave no opinion

Digitized by Microsoft®

as to whether or not Mr. Home had intercourse with spirits, nor did he seek to palliate the conduct of the Roman authorities; but such was the law of Rome, and he did not think that the Government could interfere. The Roman authorities feared that these spirits would communicate with Mr. Home whether he wished it or not, and they objected to their making Rome their dwelling-place. (Laughter.) All this might be very foolish, but he did not see that there was any cause for the interference of the British Government.

"'Mr. Hennessy pointed out that the stringent laws in England against fortune-telling and witchcraft were founded on the same principle as the laws of Rome. He had always heard from English visitors at Rome that they received the greatest attention from the Papal Government.'

"'Mr. V. Scully did not see that either the Roman Government or Mr. Home were to blame. The real parties against whom to bring the complaint were those unseen spirits who visited Mr. Home whether he wished it or not. He complained that the hon. member for Sheffield should have spoken of the Pope as 'the old gentleman' at the head of the Papal Government. In regard to Mr. Home's revelations, he did not believe in any spirit, except the case of the Witch of Endor—(a laugh)—but as they had been discussing 'spirits' all night he hoped they would have no more on the subject at present.

"' The subject then dropped.'

"As I have a great respect for Mr. Roebuck, whom I believe to be a bold and honest politician, I regret that he felt it necessary to qualify his remarks by stooping to meet the prejudices of his compeers in expressing his 'contempt for the wonderful and mysterious power of Mr. Home.' If the power be, as Mr. Roebuck admits, 'wonderful and mysterious,' it is illogical and irrational to contemn that which he does not understand.

Digitized by Microsoft®

"It is more than ten years since I first spoke to Mr. Roebuck on the subject of spiritualism, and described to him the 'wonderful and mysterious' character of the phenomena which I had then witnessed. My statements were corroborated by two or three other persons present, and as Mr. Roebuck exhibited a total unbelief in these statements, I asked him, as a lawyer, what amount of human testimony it required in his opinion to establish a fact; because I could, if testimony were of any value, obtain any reasonable number of witnesses. He did not answer that question, but ended the conversation with a significant shrug and smile, implying very plainly that he pitied me, and doubtless had he been presiding as a Master in Lunacy at an investigation into my mental condition, he would not have hesitated to pronounce me incapable of the management of my own affairs.

"Mr. Roebuck, since that period, must be aware that thousands of men and women in this country, his equals in character and intelligence, have been confirmed in 'the delusion' under which he supposed I was then labouring; and therefore I repeat that it is with feelings of surprise and regret that I find one who has been in advance of the age on most subjects, venturing to sneer at a subject upon which, if he be closely questioned, he would be forced to admit that he is profoundly ignorant.

"The two Roman Catholic members, Mr. Pope Hennessy and Mr. Vincent Scully, had better have refrained from making observations which lead us to suppose, contrary to the feeling of every enlightened man in this country, that they approve and justify the bigoted fanaticism which led to the expulsion of Mr. Home from the Papal dominions. In particular Mr. V. Scully did not show his docility as a Roman Catholic in avowing his disbelief in all spirits excepting that of the Witch of Endor. Did he mean thus publicly to brand all the spirits of the Romish Church, and its Ladies of Salette as spurious and fraudulent concoctions of the Pope and the priests? I happen to know

Digitized by Microsoft®

that if Mr. V. Scully will ask the opinion of the prince of his church, Cardinal Wiseman, he will find a very different measure of belief. It is only a few weeks ago that Cardinal Wiseman, in speaking of the modern spirit manifestations to one of his flock who is an occasional contributor to these pages, said that he entirely believed in them, and that he could not be a Catholic without doing so.

"If what is said of the Pope by his own people be true, Mr. Home has good reason to be thankful that his Holiness did not give him his blessing instead of giving him his *congé*. From a most interesting work, treating of persons and things in Rome, I make the following pertinent extract:—

"'Even the Pope himself has the reputation of possessing the Evil Eye to some extent. Ask a Roman how this is, and he will answer you as one did me the other day, 'They say so; and as for me, really it seems to me true. If he have not the *jettatura*, it is very odd that everything he blesses makes *fiasco*. We all did very well in the campaign of '48 against the Austrians. We were winning battle after battle, and all was gaiety and hope, when suddenly he blesses the cause, and everything goes to the devil at once. Nothing succeeds with anybody or anything when he wishes well to them. See, here the other day he went to Santa Agnese to have a great festival, and down goes the floor, and the people are all smashed together. Then he visits the column to the Madonna in the Piazza di Spagna, and blesses it and the workmen, and, of course, one falls from the scaffolding the same day and is killed. A week or two ago he arranged to meet the King of Naples at Porto d'Anzo, and up comes a violent storm and gale that lasts a week; then another arrangement is made, and then comes the fracas about the ex-Queen of Spain. Then, again, here was Lord C— came in the other day from Albano, being rather unwell; so the Pope sends him his special blessing, when pop! he dies right off in a twinkling. There is nothing so fatal

Digitized by Microsoft®

as his blessing. For my part I don't wonder that the workmen at the column refused to work the other day in raising it, unless the Pope stayed away.'

"In Mr. Home's autobiography he recounts several instances, I believe, but certainly one in particular, where his life was saved by the interposition of Providence, through the recognized agency of spirits. As he is himself of the Roman Catholic faith, I assume that he would have been happy at any time to have secured the Pope's blessing; and, therefore, he may, on calm reflection, be disposed to think that by a special Providence, he has been miraculously saved from the possible consequences of such a calamity. [We are sorry to say that Mr. Home already labours under the infliction of the Pope's special blessing. We have seen the original document, signed by his Holiness.—*Ed.*]

The "Spiritual Magazine," April 1, 1864, thus remarked upon this affair:—

"The remarks which we recently made on the violent expulsion by the Pope of Mr. Home from Rome, have been seriously reprobated by several of our Roman Catholic friends, who complain of them as being highly unjust towards the Holy Father, and as showing an unreasoning hostility towards Catholicism. We have every desire to be just to Catholicism, as to all classes of religious thought, and we are sorry to give offence to any by too severe criticisms, but we should be more sorry if we were to sacrifice freedom of discussion to the natural tenderness which offenders have for their own feelings. When we find that our Catholic friends are so sensitive themselves, it does not seem to be out of place to remind them that others too have feelings, which may be outraged by offences which may be said to shock humanity, and the very genius of the time. We should have thought much better of our friends if, in such a case, they had submitted in silence and in sorrow, to the shame which their spiritual head had brought upon all that is good in their religion; and it,

Digitized by Microsoft®

instead of complaining of *our* remarks, they had remonstrated against *his* conduct. We have heard nothing of this, but only the laments of children who do not like the punishment which they deserve. Even in Rome, and amongst Romanists, the barbarous act of the infallible head of the only true Church was protested against, by means of the principal residents and visitors, both royal and loyal; but to hear Englishmen in England refrain from condemning and contemning such doings is to us the saddest spectacle of all, for it shows us how necessary it is to prevent such a class from ever obtaining temporal power. One flimsy excuse for the Pope is, that what he did was not in the exercise of his spiritual power, in which alone he is infallible, but of his temporal power, which even his adherents cannot stand up for on all occasions. We believe, that what he calls the patrimony of St. Peter, has been his greatest curse, but there is no part of his alleged possessions to which he clings more pertinaciously; and if he will be a temporal ruler we shall take the liberty of blaming him when he makes such an abuse of his temporal power. Another friend complains of us for hinting a disbelief of the House of our Lady of Loretto having been removed bodily from Bethlehem to Loretto, making a temporary sojourn in Dalmatia by the way; and he informs us, on the testimony of a person who has carefully analysed the evidence, and who went purposely to Bethlehem, to Dalmatia, and to Loretto to examine the remains at the two former places, and the building itself, that there is every reason to believe that the chapel was really so removed. But surely if Mr. Home's manifestations are sorcery for merely moving a table, or for being himself lifted in the air, this moving of a house bodily from the Holy Land to Italy must have been sorcery on a much larger scale. Of course all the world believes that this Popish miracle is a gross imposture, and that, because it is so monstrously opposed to natural laws; but if the Pope could have Mr. Home raised in the air at a solemn gathering in the Great Square of St. Peter's, like St. Theresa,

Digitized by Microsoft®

it might give an air of possibility at all events to the floating of the House of our Lady. Taking levitation or the elevation of Mr. Home in the air as a special and crowning instance of his sorcery, what do we find? The same sorcery is practised by the great shining lights, the very saints of the Romish Church; and there are much fewer instances of it, unfortunately, to be found in modern spiritualism than in the authorized records of Romanism. To say nothing of the instances of it given in the Bible, it is proved beyond a doubt in the cases of St. Theresa, St. Catherine, St. Philip Neri, Richard Abbot of St. Vanne de Verdun, Ignatius Loyola, Savonarola, St. Dominick, St. Dunstan, St. Francis of Assissium, St. Cajetan, St. Bernard Ptolœmæi, St. Catherine of Ricci, St. Cupertin, and others whom we could name if this list is not long enough; but to crown the question of the act of stupidity performed on the 2nd of January last, it is only necessary to state that, according to the requirements of the Church of Rome, the working of miracles, as they call them, is a condition absolutely necessary in the canonization of saints —it being regarded as the only assured proof of their final perseverance in those holy dispositions, which entitle them to that high honour. Hence the taking cognizance of miracles for this end has always been the province of the chief pastors of the Romish Church as requiring the greatest circumspection. It was said of the Bourbons, that after all their troubles they had learnt nothing and forgotten nothing. Neither time, nor country, nor civilization, nor progress, nor humanity, nor liberty, nor even gentlemanliness seem to have any power in moderating the bigotry and the savage fanaticism of the successor of St. Peter, and the vicegerent of God. Let our Catholic friends join us in expressing their disapproval of such disgraceful modes of thumb-screwing thought, and of heretic-hunting, and we shall then be able to separate them from the general condemnation, which otherwise will be properly applied to the body as well as to the head of their section of religious opinions."

Digitized by Microsoft®

CHAPTER IV.

Sludge, the Medium—Mr. Robert Browning—Fancy Portraits.

ALTHOUGH in the gross attack on spiritualism contained in "Mr. Sludge the medium," by Mr. Robert Browning, there is indeed nothing whatever to connect his portrait of Sludge with myself, for no person who was even slightly acquainted with me could discover one point of resemblance, nevertheless, I have been asked whether such scenes as he describes in that effusion had ever occurred, and the press treated of the "poem" as meant for me. In consequence of these circumstances, as well as of the whole production being an offensively coarse attack upon spiritualism in general and upon all mediums without exception; and feeling it to be moreover, though probably unobserved by himself, an insult to the memory of his deceased wife, whose intellect was far above his own, and who lived and died a believer in spiritualism, I find myself compelled to notice this remarkable *poem* of Mr. Robert Browning. Accepting the old and recognised definition of the word *poem* as from *ποίεω*, *facio*, these lines constitute a poem, for they were *made* by Mr. Browning, but what other characteristic of poetry they possess, I must admit that I, in common with many of my friends, have been unable to discover. Some of the lines are equal to the productions of the poet Close, others

Digitized by Microsoft®

suggest the licentiousness of Don Juan divorced from its poetic imagery; as an example of the first I may quote the two first lines of Sludge's confession:—

> "Fol-lol-the-rido-liddle-iddle-ol!
> You see, sir, it's your own fault more than mine."

The following passage, while giving some evidence also of writing like that of the Poet Close, is an example of the latter:—

> "I got up from my gorge
> On offal in the gutter, and preferred
> Your canvass backs: I took their carver's size,
> Measured his modicum of intelligence,
> Tickled him on the cockles of his heart
> With a raven feather, and next week found myself
> Sweet and clean, dining daintily, dizen'd smart,
> Set on a stool buttress'd by ladies' knees,
> Every soft smiler calling me her pet,
> Encouraging my story to uncoil
> And creep out from its hole, inch after inch,
> 'How last night, I no sooner snug in bed,
> *Tuck'd up, just as they left me,*—than came raps!'"

The delicacy and good taste of the following also is beyond comment:—

> "Curse your superior, superintending sort,
> Who, since you hate smoke, send up boys that climb
> To cure a chimney, bid a 'medium' lie
> To sweep your truth down! curse your women too,
> Your insolent wives and daughters, that fire up
> Or faint away if a male hand squeeze theirs;
> Yet, to encourage Sludge, may play with Sludge
> As only a 'medium,' only the kind of thing
> They must humour, fondle, . . Oh, to misconceive
> Were too preposterous! But I've paid them out!
> They've had their wish—call'd for the naked truth,
> And in she tripp'd, sat down and bade them stare;
> They had to blush a little and forgive!"

And again:—

> "Miss Stokes turns—Rahab—nor a bad exchange,"

Digitized by Microsoft®

Is followed further on by :—

> "To hear your outcries, one would think I caught
> Miss Stokes by the scuff o' the neck, and pitch'd her flat,
> Foolish face foremost!"

I have no intention of criticising writing which is, like not a little of Mr. Browning's work, either above or below criticism, as the author or the reader may think, but I must allude to one point which displays utter ignorance on the subject of spiritualism. Mr. Sludge is supposed to have been led into his confession by an over-dose of champagne, and to be sustained during its continuance by potations of egg nogg, aided by the soothing influence of the Virginian weed; near the close he becomes maudling drunk and breaks out—

> "And I've lost you, lost myself,
> Lost all, l-l-l . . . ."

He is relieved by the substantial comfort of a goodly number of five-dollar notes, poetically named V. notes, and after concluding his speech with—

> "Bl-l-less you, sir!"

he breaks out—it may be supposed when outside the door with—

> "R-r-r, you brute beast and blackguard! cowardly scamp!
> I only wish I dared burn down the house
> And spoil your sniggering!"

Which beautiful poetry continues for fourteen lines, and is followed by some regrets ending in the consoling reflection :—

> "Begin elsewhere anew!
> Boston's a hole, the herring pond is wide,
> V-notes are something, liberty still more
> Beside, is he the only fool in the world?"

Had Mr. Browning known anything practically of spiritualism, he would have been aware that indulgence

Digitized by Microsoft®

in intoxicating drink has a strong tendency to destroy medium power; but this kind of attack gives me reason to believe that Mr. Browning did intend his fancy portrait of Mr. Sludge to represent me; for I happen to know that he once remarked of me that I was in the habit of being assisted home drunk by the police nightly. The idea is worthy of his creative genius, as if there be any pleasure in the sensation of being drunk, I am as yet ignorant of it, or of its effects, for I never have been sensibly affected by intoxicating drink of any kind in the course of my life, and am, as all my friends well know, exceedingly abstemious.

With respect to this production Mrs. Sarah Helen Whitman, the well known American authoress, characterized it as a disgrace to Mr. Robert Browning, and in a letter to the editor of an American journal, said, "If you will, moreover, take the trouble to read the poem of Mr. Browning to which I have referred, you will understand why it is regarded by some of Mr. Browning's warmest admirers as '*a blot* on the 'scutcheon.'"

On the appearance of Mr. Browning's book the "Spiritual Magazine," on July, 1864, gave the following article under the title of "Mr. Robert Browning on Spiritualism."—"The press is quite alert and looking up again on the subject of spiritualism, and is loud in the praises of Mr. Robert Browning's latest effort in poetry, of which sixty-eight pages are taken up with a violent explosion of his feelings, under the title of 'Mr. Sludge, the Medium.' It has not been often, nor from any great number of the critics that Mr. Browning has found hitherto any strong sympathy for his poetry, nor has he taken it much to heart that his readers and admirers were so few. It has rather fed his vanity the fuller, and has the more convinced him of his one idea that he was a poet before his time. He has been *Forstered* into this feeling by a few earnest friends of the press, who have never ceased to shew their friendship for the man, by writing up

Digitized by Microsoft®

the poet, and assuring him that his metal had the true ring in it. He has never wavered in this belief himself, and he is so sensitive in his vanity, that if he could have doubted it he would have collapsed at once as poor Keats did, under an adverse review. His overweening vanity, however, aided by his few devoted friends, has saved him to us, and he is happy to add still to his posthumous fame by occasional essays of his genius. We can only sit, after vain attempts to follow his ideas, in wonderment at the awful vastness of the human mind, which can complacently give birth to such red-hot words about something that we cannot understand, and of which we are rather glad than otherwise, that we are not the posterity that will have to decipher the meaning. A high priest of nature is he, ministering in the temple alone, and on a pedestal which he, happy man, never feels to be unsteady beneath him. What a striking wonder is this faculty which some men have of self-satisfaction, and of living in an atmosphere which they fancy to be of serenest ether.

"We knew him well years ago, when he was making his first soaring flights, and were almost frightened for him when the coarse critics dealt with his sensitive nature. Then it was, however, that he conquered them for ever by determining them to be fools, and wrapping himself in the mantle of posterity. This was his happiest hit of all, and to give him its full benefit, he only wanted the assistance of a few friends, who were in his eyes endued with the heaven-born quality of understanding him. Nothing after this could touch him more, or penetrate his armour; and the more the critics have raved at him, the more he has despised and contemned them with words more rancorous and violent than their own, for daring to criticize the prince of poets—the man who was before his age.

"It is necessary to go through this little outline, in order to have some idea of the mind of the man who is just now condescending to give us the overflow of his genius on the subject of spiritualism. None but one of such a nature,

Digitized by Microsoft®

and only after he had received a special wound, could have got up the holy fire to such a pitch, as Mr. Browning warms himself by, in attacking Mr. Sludge the medium. What can poor Sludge have done to the poet, for beyond the rancour which he feels towards mankind in general, the poet must surely have some personal injury to resent? It is not quite easy to see that Mr. Home is intended to be the victim, but whether it be he or not, the press has at once taken it as meant for him, and has charged him upon the facts or fancies mentioned in the poem. An intimate friend, too, of Mr. Browning's has been so far taken in by the statements, as to find it necessary to inquire if such scenes ever happened as are described, and Mr. Home has had to say in answer that the whole is mere invention. It would therefore be better to take the bull by the horns at once, and to treat the poem as a violent, rancorous attack upon Mr. Home and his private character, intending to lead or allow the public to believe that the scene depicted is taken from life, and that the poet has only dressed it up in verse according to his fancy, filling up the interspaces with the usual spasms which characterize Mr. Browning's effusions.

"Even poetry, where such personal allusions and charges are made, should preserve its basis of truth as the apple of its eye. The imaginative element should not be applied to facts, or the versifier degenerates into a slanderer. A kind friend of ours, when our children tell fibs, says they are only poets, but we think he mistakes the word. We have therefore thought it best to reduce Mr. Browning's poem, so far as his facts and narrative are concerned, into plain prose, and thus to lay bare what was in his mind when he began to write. As to the rest of the poem, there are some good things in it which we could see a glimmering of, and all these we are content to leave to that posterity which is the last refuge of the author, as patriotism is said to be the last refuge of the scoundrel.

"To do this fairly, and to raise the issue between Mr.

Digitized by Microsoft®

Browning and his probable victim, Mr. Home, we have very carefully gone through his sixty-eight pages, and we will afterwards give the key to the rancour and virulence which are observable throughout. It is not often that we can hope, from personal knowledge of both parties, to get to the very pith of the affair, and to shew the secret springs of action, while the poet for long years is nursing his wrath to keep it warm.

"The poem, then, of 'Mr. Sludge, the Medium,' opens with the heaven-born poet's knuckles in the medium's windpipe, consequent on his having just caught him cheating the poet by giving some bogus revelation from his mother. Mr. Sludge at once owns to the cheat, and, on the ground of its being his first offence, he begs him to remove his knuckles, and not to expose him as an impostor. He protests that it was the poet's champagne that put the folly in his head. The poet, however, is relentless, and Mr. Sludge, not being able to rid himself of the knuckles, offers to tell him all about the tricks—he makes a clean breast of it, and confesses that the whole is imposture, and that he will change his trade and cheat no more.

"Mr. Sludge commences by saying that it is the fault of the curious gentlefolk more than his. He hears them talk of ghosts, and breaks in with the words 'I saw a ghost;' at once finds sympathy, and gets into their society. Once there, it is necessary to keep alive the means by which he mounted. He continues the fraud, satisfies one and then another, till he has many friends; and when a sceptic comes, they all set at him, till he, too, must succumb. At this comparatively early stage, while Sludge's conscience is yet tender and he has some qualms, is it to be expected that he will spoil all his good fortune by confessing. Having made the first step, would you thus retrace it? No! You would go on deeper and deeper, like Sludge. It is too late—he must go on. Now he makes raps, shows stars, and succeeds in producing

Digitized by Microsoft®

an audible voice. The spirits now are at his command, and his delighted friends crowd round him. As he receives them at his own house, as his guests, the poet asks how guests can be critical; but if one out of a dozen should say a word all the eleven pounce on him, and Sludge waves his hat in triumph.

"Visions no longer suffice and the friends want something external. It is but a step more. He jogs the table about and learns his other tricks and sleight-of-hand turns, shoves, and tilts the table, cracks his joints, manages his feet, works wires that twitch the curtains, plays the glove at the end of his slipper, puts out the lights, and then—every one is delighted and satisfied. There are sentences given by raps—a message from a dear child to its mother. Is that a time for the mother to be critical? Oh, no, poor thing; she is an easy dupe. It gives a test answer that it was six years old and rode a rocking-horse. How could Sludge have known these facts? Oh! he makes it his business to pick up these little particulars that your uncle was a tailor and your wife thought to have married Miggs but missed him and hit you. Then with those who have been duped, how are they to be undeceived again? They won't believe it was possible to cheat them, and say that even if Sludge admitted that he cheated them they wouldn't believe him. They prefer to believe in a lie, and urge on poor Sludge to play the spirit medium for a livelihood, rather than to take him as he is and keep him fat. So he excuses himself, and says that he helps religion by his tricks, and lays the Atheist sprawling on his back, and props up St. Paul or Swedenborg at least. It is just the proper way to baulk the sceptics, and no use in being squeamish as to the means you use.

"Another excuse which Sludge gives is, that beyond all this there is in human nature a real love of a lie which liars find ready made for the lies they make, as hand for glove, or tongue for sugar plum. It is for them he

Digitized by Microsoft®

cheated when he could, rapped with his toe-joints, set sham hands at work, wrote down names weak in sympathetic ink, rubbed odic lights with ends of phosphor match, and all the rest.

"The admitting of the supernatural element in the Bible, which comes to us from our mothers, prepares us, or some of us, to see instances of it still in the world, and to accept omens, prodigies, and special providences. If Sludge sees Charles's Wain at twelve at night, it warns him to have his hair cut without a day's delay; and he spies a providence in the fire's going out, or the kettle's boiling; he has presentiments, his dreams come true, and he itches at the elbow when at whist he ought to trump.

"After all these his confessions are done, he is foolish enough to ask the poet to shake hands with him and finds it hard that he refuses. The poem closes with a hearty curse from Sludge upon the poet.

"This is not much to get out of nearly seventy pages, but it pretends to describe a scene which so far as it relates to Mr. Home has no foundation in fact, and Mr. Browning has further made the story the vehicle of a distinct allegation that the manifestations of spiritualism are nothing but gross imposture from beginning to end, at all times and under all circumstances. This is what it comes to, and it is unfortunately only in accordance with the general turn of Mr. Browning's mind to deny not only these things, but others related to them of much more importance to his own soul. There are many indeed who bear him sad company in this denial of all supernatural power and providence, and he is particularly unfortunate in this respect among his intimate friends; but it is almost painful, if he be a poet, either for us or for our posterity, that he should try to infect his readers with the disease which so maddens him. Especially, however, do we lament that the man who merged the name of Miss Barrett in that of Browning, should come forward now after her departure to deny what was the

Digitized by Microsoft®

very soul and essence of one of the best and truest English-women who have ever lived; and of the greatest poetess, it has been said, of this or any other age. It is a shocking libel on his wife and on her dearest beliefs. There are many coarse jesters, and hard men of science to whom it is allowed to deny all spiritual action in the affairs of men; but for the husband of Mrs. Barrett Browning it was not permitted to desecrate her memory and her sweet muse by this ribald nonsense.

"With a man of his vanity, however, and that wounded, as will presently be seen, by Mr. Home, in years gone by, but not forgotten, everything must give way to his contemptuous rancour against the man, and against a spiritual world, the existence of which he looks down upon from his throne, as a personal affront to himself and to his poetic majesty.

"This is, perhaps, not the place to say all that we should wish, to show our sense of Mrs. Barrett Browning's sweet character, and of that depth and innocence of her soul which brought her at once and by sympathy into communion with the spiritual. This was the secret of her power, however, as a woman and as a poet. Every one loved her, for the love that was in her towards all, and which made an atmosphere about her that it was so enchanting and pleasant to dwell in. Happy was it for Mr. Browning to have the right to call her wife, for it gave him the best chance he could have in this world of becoming alive to the spiritual beauties of the vast inner world, which he still denied. But if he lost this golden opportunity, he gained in more earthly advantages, though again at the cost of increasing his vanity, for after his marriage with Mrs. Barrett Browning, he became invested, as her husband, with much of the respect and admiration which her qualities willingly drew from the world, and his critics became more friendly still to him, out of their love to her. Even the griffins of the press could not find heart to abuse the husband of so dear a

Digitized by Microsoft®

friend. So everything we see has tended to blow him up still larger, and no one can tell yet what will be the end of it. Should he finally burst, 'The Examiner' and others of his friends will have much to answer for.

"As we wish to make this little story complete in itself, and not to have again to add to it, we will now give an exact account, for the truth of which we can vouch, of the only two interviews which Mr. Browning and Mr. Home ever had. It is given in the shape of a narrative by Mr. Home, and the reader will see how the wine turned to vinegar on the poet's stomach, when his vanity was touched, first by the wrong direction of the poet's crown and by being asked to leave the room, and next by being refused another *séance* when he asked for one: *Tantæne animis cœlestibus iræ?*

"'I have never seen Mr. Browning but twice. The first time was at the house of Mr. Rymer, at Ealing, at a *séance* there. Mr. Browning was then married to Mrs. Barrett Browning, whom I had known by repute, and through intimate mutual friends, for several years, and I thus became aware of her deep interest and belief in spiritualism, which continued up to the time of her death. Mr. and Mrs. Rymer and their family were present at the *séance*, which began by several of the ordinary manifestations. Mr. Browning was requested to investigate everything as it occurred, and he availed himself freely of the invitation. Several times during the evening he voluntarily and earnestly declared that anything like imposture was out of the question. Previously to the arrival of Mr. and Mrs. Browning some of the children had been gathering flowers in the garden, and Miss Rymer and I had made a wreath of clematis. This wreath was lying on a table, at a little distance from that at which we were sitting. The wreath was afterwards put on the table at which we were sitting, but whether naturally or by spirit hands I do not remember. During the *séance* this wreath was raised from the table by supernatural power in the

Digitized by Microsoft®

presence of us all, and whilst we were watching it, Mr. Browning, who was seated at the opposite side of the table, left his place and came and stood behind his wife, towards whom the wreath was being slowly carried, and upon whose head it was placed, in full sight of us all, and whilst he was standing close behind her. He expressed no disbelief; as indeed, it was impossible for any one to have any of what was passing under his eyes, whilst Mrs. Browning was much moved, and she not only then but ever since expressed her entire belief and pleasure in what then occurred. It was the remark of all the Rymer family, that Mr. Browning seemed much disappointed that the wreath was not put upon his own head instead of his wife's, and that his placing himself in the way of where it was being carried, was for the purpose of giving it an opportunity of being placed upon his own brow.

"'Shortly after this a communication was made, requesting that all would leave the room, excepting Mr. Rymer and me, as something was to be told of an important matter private to Mr. Rymer. During Mr. Browning's absence with the rest of the family, I was afterwards told by them that he seemed quite hurt at being sent out of the room, and said he was not aware that spirits could have secrets. Still he indicated no doubt of anything he had seen. On returning to the room he appeared to be very much out of temper, but I paid no attention to him, as Mrs. Browning was so kind and attentive to me. All that was done was in the presence of eight persons, besides Mr. and Mrs. Browning, all of whom are still living, and are ready to testify to the truth of every word here written if it should be gainsaid by Mr. Browning.

"'Two days afterwards Mr. Browning wrote to Mrs. Rymer requesting that he might be allowed another *séance*, and to bring with him his friend, Miss Helen Faucit. Mrs. Rymer replied that owing to my ill health, and her engagements, and the arrangements previous to our going to the seaside, it would not be possible to receive him

Digitized by Microsoft®

again before we left town. A few days subsequently I came to town with Mrs. Rymer and her eldest son, to make some farewell calls, the first of which was to Mr. and Mrs. Browning. We were shown into the drawing-room, and he, advancing to meet us, shook hands with Mrs. Rymer; then, passing by me shook hands with her son. As he was repassing me I held out my hand, when, with a tragic air, he threw his hand on his left shoulder, and stalked away. My attention was now drawn to Mrs. Browning, who was standing nearly in the centre of the room, and looked very pale and agitated. I approached and she placed both her hands in mine, and said, in a voice of emotion, 'Oh, dear Mr. Home, do not, do not blame me. I am so sorry, but I am not to blame.' I was wonder-struck, not knowing in the least what the curious scene meant—indeed, it would have been comical, but for the deep emotion from which Mrs. Browning was suffering. For a moment all was confusion, but at last we were seated, I scarce know how, when Mr. Browning began in an excited manner, saying, 'Mrs. Rymer, I beg to inform you that I was exceedingly dissatisfied with everything I saw at your house the other night, and I should like to know why you refused to receive me again with my friend.' I replied to this, 'Mr. Browning, that was the time and place for you to have made objections regarding the manifestations, and not now. I gave you every possible opportunity, and you availed yourself of it, and expressed yourself satisfied.' He said, 'I am not addressing myself to you, sir.' I said, 'No; but it is of me you are speaking, and it would only be fair and gentleman-like to allow me to reply.' Mrs. Rymer said, 'Mr. Home is quite right, and as regards not being able to receive you and your friend, we could not do so on account of our engagements.' Mr. Browning's face was pallid with rage, and his movements, as he swayed backwards and forwards on his chair, were like those of a maniac. At this moment I rose to leave the room, and,

Digitized by Microsoft®

passing him, shook hands with Mrs. Browning, who was nearly ready to faint. As she shook hands with me she said, 'Dear Mr. Home, I am not to blame. Oh, dear! oh, dear!'"

"In conclusion we have only to say that, as this is a matter of fact and not of opinion, we shall be quite willing to give insertion to any reply, in prose, from Mr. Browning, if he will write it so as to be intelligible to the present generation of men who compose our readers, and we shall be all the more pleased that he should have this opportunity of explaining himself, as it is a pity he should be knocking his head against this hard subject, just at the time when his contemporaries of the first rank are one by one publicly declaring their full belief and knowledge of its truth."

In her "Notes on England and Italy," Mrs. Hawthorne says, in an account of an evening at Casa Guidi:—"Mr. Browning introduced the subject of spiritism, and there was an animated talk. Mr. Browning cannot believe, and Mrs. Browning cannot help believing."

Mr. Robert Browning, however, is by no means alone in his capacity of invention, for several paragraphs have appeared from time to time testifying to all who were in the slightest degree acquainted with me, that the writers had drawn upon their fertile imaginations for every detail, whether of character or personal appearance. I here reproduce a few which may serve to amuse those who know me. The following which appeared in "Echoes from the Clubs," for April 29, 1868, is inimitably absurd; it is headed:—"A *Home* Thrust.—Some two years ago a young gentleman possessing that pleasing and ingenuous expression of countenance which the late Mr. Thackeray loved to ascribe to his heroes, was seated in the halls of the—let us say, *Généralife*. To him addressed himself a dark-complexioned stranger with quiet, shifting eyes, curly and oily-looking black hair, and a nose which seemed to vouch for a purely Caucasian descent. A brisk conversation ensued. The dark-haired stranger was a

Digitized by Microsoft®

man who had evidently seen the world; he had sat at the tables of the great: princes, kings, and even emperors, were on familiar terms with him. "This," said he, extending a hand on which sparkled two splendid rings, and indicating a magnificent diamond, "was the gift of Louis Napoleon, for a service I rendered him." The recollection of Mr. Wyndham Flitter and his turquoise caused a smile to flit across his companion's face as he continued, "and this sapphire was a present from the Czar." The smile was now so palpable that the stranger observed in a reproachful tone, "I suppose then that you think I am a humbug." "Think," was the cutting reply, "I don't think it; I know you're one." The stranger departed incontinently, and it was not till many months after that he was pointed out to his unappreciative companion as the celebrated Mr. Home."

My friends must have wondered how they had not seen me on any occasion when my naturally dry light hair had become a head of "curly and oily-looking black hair." As to the "nose which seemed to vouch for a purely Caucasian descent," this, of course, might have been managed by a well adapted false feature, and it is needless for me to say that the remainder of the paragraph is as probable as that these miraculous changes in my personal appearance had occurred.

In the "Mask," of June, 1868, an article was devoted to me, from which I extract the following:—

"We do not deny for a moment that Mr. Home may produce marvels in his own rooms in the Sloane Athenæum, or anywhere else where he may have frequent access; but we challenge him to produce supernatural effects on any piece of furniture we chose, (*sic*) time and place indicated by us, and before a select few chosen by ourselves.

"We don't pretend to explain Mr. Home's performances, for we have never seen them, though we have met that modern Cagliostro several times under not very successful circumstances. Of course, we have heard him

Digitized by Microsoft®

relate his connection with the court of Russia (who has not?), and seen him show his diamond ring; but on one occasion when we were present he showed it, with much pomposity, to his neighbour, who possessed and had on his finger at the time a brilliant of nearly double the size, which, on production, eclipsed the czar's gift, and chagrined considerably the great spiritualist. That he has sharp eyes, a cunning wit, and quick, long fingers, there is no denying—so has a fox. That he never receives money for his gifts, the present action will entirely disprove. And, after all, diamonds seldom fall in value. Besides, a man of the world, who has made weak man his study, knows well the effect of refusing. Anyone with a belief in Mr. Home would feel that he ought not to employ his supernatural powers for nothing but another's amusement or instruction, and at the same time would be touched by the noble magnanimity which was poor but honest. Ten guineas refused would probably be altered either to twenty guineas, forwarded anonymously, or take the form of a diamond worth five-and-twenty pounds. The dupe would be always ready to swear that money was refused, and yet would know that he had amply repaid his benefactor, which would be, in other words, *le généreux battu et Home content.*"

This sneering attack is as transparently imaginative as the former one; and though altogether ridiculous, I may ask the writer gravely, where and when he has heard and seen what he so impudently declares he has witnessed? His acquaintance with specialities in nature is highly valuable, for he seems to be familiar with long-fingered foxes, some of which he ought to present to the Zoological Society, as they are as yet unknown to students of natural history.

Shortly after I last left America paragraphs appeared in the papers then, stating that "Home, the Medium," or "*David S. Hume*," the celebrated "Medium," had sailed for Europe to be married to a rich Scotch widow; and

Digitized by Microsoft®

some time later it was announced in the English papers, that I was about to lead to the hymeneal altar no less a personage than Madame Möet, whose name is well known in connection with her wine.

The following paragraph, which I cut from a newspaper, is also thoroughly absurd to all who know anything of spiritualism; it appeared some few years since:—

"Mr. Home, the spiritualist, is said to have challenged the medium *malgré lui* to compete with him in flying through the air a distance of two miles, the winner to give the stakes to any charity he thinks fit. Mr. Addison has accepted the challenge for an early date, and the present odds are three to two in his favour."



Digitized by Microsoft®

CHAPTER V.

NICE, AMERICA, RUSSIA—THE DOUBLE SEANCES IN LONDON.

FROM Naples I went to Nice, and concerning my stay there I find the following notice in the "Spiritual Magazine," giving as full an account as is needful.

"After Mr. Home's expulsion from Rome he spent several weeks at Nice, where the phenomena were examined and scrutinised by a great many of the winter residents, and many were convinced of the facts of spiritual power. We hear that these new converts are now returning with the spring to England, and a correspondent writes us that amongst his own friends he numbers half-a-dozen of them, and that they are wonderfully impressed with what they have seen. It appears that the manifestations were not confined to Mr. Home, for that after he had left Nice, a party of ladies and gentlemen formed a circle to see what could be done without him. They soon obtained very striking results. The medium was found to be a Russian lady staying at Nice with her family, and who, a month ago, was unconscious of her power. She speaks only a word or two of English, but under her influence a heavy oval table gives answers in English and German. She is also a writing medium, and her hand writes, without any play of the fingers, intelligible messages. A great progress has been made by these occurrences amongst the visitors.

Digitized by Microsoft®

From Nice I proceeded to Paris, where I remained for some weeks, after which I returned to England, and then crossed the Atlantic, to revisit my old friends in America. Here I decided on giving public readings, in which I succeeded fairly. On one occasion, after having given a reading in Norwich, Connecticut, I gave a second for the benefit of the Soldiers' Aid Society, the announcement of which led to the appearance in the local journal of the following letter from a clergyman:—

"MESSRS. EDITORS:—I crave permission, as a Christian man, to say a word to Christians in Norwich concerning the lecture this evening. I was greatly surprised to hear that the audience at the first of Mr. Home's readings was larger than had been seen at any lecture in Breed Hall this winter. But I supposed that the fact might be explained by the natural curiosity of our citizens to hear and see a man who has so *distinguished* himself as has the gentleman in question.

"I must confess, however, that I was not only surprised, but grieved, to see the announcement that Mr. Home had consented to the request of our Soldiers' Aid Society, that he should give another reading for the benefit of that institution. It was very kind and courteous of Mr. Home, and I have no doubt he is sincere in his spiritualistic belief. I have no quarrel with him. But are the Christian men and women of Norwich, who support our Soldiers' Aid Society, reduced to such extremities that they must resort to a representative and exponent of spiritualism for aid in their Christian and patriotic work? Is it seemly that Christians should patronize such an entertainment? Most of them believe one of two things in regard to spiritualism—either that it is an arrant imposition and delusion, or that it is ascribable to Satanic agency. Probably no Christian worthy of the name believes that it is what it professes to be, a system of communication with and revelation from the souls of the departed. Whoever believes this must in honesty become a

Digitized by Microsoft®

spiritualist, and be guided by spiritualistic revelations. I care not which of the two theories named be adopted, it seems to me equally indecorous for Christians to have anything to do directly or indirectly with spiritualism. If it be said that Mr. Home does not bring forward his peculiar notions in these readings, I may answer that even admitting the statement to be true, it is undeniable that the crowd goes to hear him not because he has a fine voice and is an excellent reader, but because he is a spiritualist, a representative man, a famous man in that art or science or delusion, whichever it may be. And for the public publicly to patronize him is to endorse, or, at least, to patronize and countenance his principles.

"But I deny the statement. It was publicly announced in your paper after Mr. Home's reading that at least one loud rap was heard on the stage, and two faces, one quite distinct, and the other more shadowy, were seen hovering about the speaker. It seems, therefore, that Mr. Home cannot or will not leave his spiritualism behind him, and probably, every candid person who reads this communication, will confess to himself that he is vastly more attracted to the Reading to-night, by the hope of seeing or hearing something spiritualistic in the course of the evening, than by the charms of Mr. Home's voice, and skill as an elocutionist.

"I hope, therefore, that for the credit of Norwich and her churches, the Soldiers' Aid Society will receive a severe rebuke to-night in the absence of the Christian people of Norwich from that Reading. Mr. Home will doubtless understand that I have no personal feeling against him; so far as I know, he is a most estimable gentleman in private life, and his private character has my respect. But there are thousands of republicans in this city, who would not go to hear Gov. Seymour out of principle, though he spoke no politics; and many a democrat who would not listen to Wendell Phillips, though he talked poetry and literature—lest their act should seem to endorse the

Digitized by Microsoft®

avowed principles of the man. Shall Christians be less strict than politicians? Shall they denounce and fight against spiritualism, and turn about to countenance and publicly abet the system in the person of its most prominent exponent? I hope not.

"JOHN V. LEWIS."

To this letter I replied, and a somewhat lengthened correspondence resulted. One result of Mr. Lewis's letter, I may mention, was to attract public attention to the subject: in so far as concerned the reading for the Soldiers' Aid Society, he contributed largely to advertise it, and the room was crowded, I am happy to say, to the substantial benefit of the fund.

I sailed from New York in May, 1865, for England, and on my return to London, found letters waiting for me which rendered it necessary that I should go to Paris. The following is from a letter I wrote at the time:—

"The Empress was Regente, and I may say that I was much pleased to note how very general the satisfaction was to find that instead of her being a woman whose only thought was dress or frivolity, she was a true-hearted, great-willed woman, capable not only of giving orders, but of seeing that they are executed. Deep and true in her feelings, pure and unselfish in her actions, she is a noble lady, an ornament to her sex; long may she live! When in Paris I had the honour of meeting and dining with His Highness Mustapha Pacha, the brother of the Viceroy of Egypt, and heir to the throne. I could only remain in Paris three weeks, for I had letters necessitating my presence in Russia. On leaving Paris I went to Germany on a short visit to Her Highness the Princess of the Mingrelia, and then I left for Russia.

"I have here to relate a singular incident in connection with my arrival at St. Petersburg. I sent a telegram to my friend the Baron Meyendorff, from Vergchalova on the Russian frontier, telling him the hour at which I would arrive at St. Petersburg. The Baron is an officer in the

Digitized by Microsoft®

Emperor's Horse Guards, and was then on duty at Peterhoff, where the Emperor was. His father, who is an old and favourite General and Master of the Imperial Horses, sent him my telegram. He had just time to take the train and come to meet me, so that no one knew of my arrival. I reached St. Petersburg at seven o'clock P.M., and went at once to the Baron Meyendorff's, where I wrote a note to my brother-in-law the Count Koucheleff Besborodka, to tell him I was in the city, but would not have time to see him for a day or two, having to leave early the following morning for Peterhoff. Great was my surprise when there came a note from one of my dearest friends, the Count Tolstoï, who is an aide-de-camp of the Emperor, and was my groomsman when I was married. His letter only said :—

"'Dear Daniel, I am so glad you are here. Come at any moment, day or night. You know how glad we are to see you. Yours,

'ALEXIS.'

"The last letter I had received from him was three months previously, and from one of his places in the very interior of Russia—at which far locality I supposed he still was; and that same afternoon, as we were nearing St. Petersburg, I was thinking of those I would fain have seen, and he was more especially of the number; but I thought him far distant. I at once went to his hotel, and his wife said,—

"'Well, Daniel, I would not have thought it possible for you not to have come at once and spoken to me.'

"I replied, 'Well, I rather think *I* am the one who ought to make the reproach. But where on earth did you see me?'

"'Why, at the Arcade, to be sure.'

"I, thinking the Countess meant the station, replied, 'Well, you must have seen that I was weary with the journey and in a hurry to get my luggage. But at *what hour*, pray, did you see me?'

Digitized by Microsoft®

"'*At four o'clock.* But what do you mean by your luggage? You were in the Arcade!'

"I told her I had arrived that evening at *seven.* She then told me she and her niece had seen me at four, and that she had come home and told Alexis, 'Only imagine! We have seen Daniel! and he did not seem to know us. Do at once send him a note, to the Count Koucheleff's.'

"Her niece confirmed this statement, declaring positively that she, too, had seen me.

"The count had accordingly sent the note to me, so positive were the ladies that they had met me; and the servant took it to a house in town—and there the servants told him that I had not been in Russia for years, and was not expected. Nothing daunted by this, the countess sent to the country seat, and the servant who took my note heard the other one ask for me, and so brought me the note.

"To say the least it is a singular incident, and it seems to add another to the list of those mysterious cases of 'double' appearance which the German writers call *doppleganger.* If the spirit of man can thus, by the mere force of friendship and attraction, leave the body while still hampered by the conditions of its visible and grosser connections, why should we wonder that such marvellous manifestations of spirit-power are exhibited by those who have for ever cast off their perishing robes of flesh, and entered upon the freer and truer life of the disembodied soul?

"The singularity of the occurrence led to remark, and the other evening the emperor asked me 'if that was true?'

"I have been staying at the 'English Palace' in Peterhoff, and have often seen the emperor. We have had some very beautiful and interesting *séances.* I cannot tell even you, my dear ——, what manifestations occurred, for you know I never relate what transpires where there are crowned heads.

Digitized by Microsoft®

"I spent eight evenings at the place of the Grand Duke and Grand Duchess Constantine, at Strelna. The Grand Duke is now absent, but will return before I leave Russia. I had so many visits to make and receive, that at last it began to tell on my nervous system, and one of my friends prevailed on me to accompany him to the great fair Nijni-Norgorod, from which point I write to you. I will remain here in all probability three weeks, and then return to St. Petersburg to take leave of the emperor."

I returned from St. Petersburg direct to London, and it was shortly after my return that I was at a *séance*, at which a peculiar manifestation occurred, of which the following account has been printed:—

"I proceed to narrate briefly a few events which occurred at a *séance*, on the 30th January, 1866, given by Mrs. Macdougall Gregory, where Mr. Home was present, and where all the circle, if I mistake not, accepted spiritualism as a reality. One gentleman, however, while he did so, had serious doubts as to the source of the phenomena, and as to the propriety of courting these developments.

"We had not been long sitting at a large table in the front drawing-room, when the usual manifestations began, which increased with such force that the whole room was literally shaken. While the table palpitated violently by the power, the words, 'Take six with you into the other room,' were addressed by raps to Mr. Home, and caused those who were selected by the spirits to adjourn into the back drawing-room, where they sat down at a table, having removed the lamp and opened the window, as desired by the spirit message. One of the six happened to be a lady whose daughter had been lately taken to the spirit-land, a girl who had been known on earth as 'Motie,' the Hindostani name for pearl. To this lady the following message was spelled out, 'Mother—Symbol is under mother's hand for'——. She immedi-

Digitized by Microsoft®

ately told us that she felt something like a large bead under her hand, and when the light was brought in it was found to be an unattached pearl, which had never been bored, and that had been brought to our circle by no earthly hand. After another message respecting the future disposition of the pearl, they returned to the other room and rejoined the rest of the party. A large accordion was played with more than common skill while Mr. Home held it with one hand; once or twice we distinctly perceived that two hands were touching the keys, and an air which the young girl had formerly played upon the harp, was now played with variations upon the accordion. Answers were also given by the instrument instead of by raps.

"In the midst of our conversation Mr. Home fell into a trance; this was, perhaps, the most salient feature of the *séance*, for while in this state, which must have lasted about an hour, he appeared to be influenced or possessed by the spirit friends who surrounded us, personating in manner those whom he had never seen, but who had been known by the several members of our circle. This was most remarkable in the case of one whom we will call by the name designated to her by Mr. Home, namely, that of Margaret, although she had only been known by that of Christy, as a servant in the family of one of the gentlemen present, and had been drowned forty years ago. Mr. Home went through the action of drowning, and gave such proofs of the identity of 'Christy,' that the son of her former master, who was the gentleman present, was fain to accept them as unmistakable. While entranced, Mr. Home also explained to us the difficulty that the spirits had experienced in bringing the pearl: it had passed through no less than three orders of spirits."

"'Margaret' had not come without an object to our *séance;* as there appeared to have been a slight suspicion of foul play in the manner in which she met her end, her

Digitized by Microsoft®

aim was obviously to clear the character of a fellow-servant who had since joined her in the spirit-land.

"L. M. GREGORY."

The following is an account of a *séance*, on Easter Eve, Saturday, March 31, 1866, written by one of those present:

"Five persons assembled for a *séance* at Mr. S. C. Hall's house at Campden Hill: Mr. and Mrs. S. C. Hall, Lady Dunsany, Mrs. Henry Senior, and Mr. D. D. Home. When he arrived he was pale and worn, and we feared that we should have few manifestations. He sat down to the piano and played and sang for some time; and on his beginning a little Russian air, a favourite of his late wife's, a chair which was at some distance from the piano, *slid* up and placed itself beside him. I was sitting close to the piano on the other side, and I first saw the chair move. The others gathered round, and he went on playing some time, though his hands became perfectly rigid, and it was evident that they were not moved by his own volition. After some time his hands were withdrawn from the piano and he became entranced, knelt down, and poured forth a beautiful prayer: then he came out of his trance, refreshed and happy. In a few minutes we sat round the table, which at once began to vibrate and tremble, and was raised off the floor to a considerable height. *Very* loud and *heavy* knocks were heard on the table, the floor, and the furniture round the room; presently the accordion was touched; the alphabet was asked for, and it was spelt out—'We will play the earth-life of One who was not of earth.'

"First we had simple, sweet, soft music for some minutes, then it became intensely sad, then the tramp, tramp, as of a body of men marching mingled with the music, and I exclaimed, 'The march to Calvary!' Then three times the tap-tapping sound of a hammer on a nail (like two metals meeting). A *crash* and a burst of wailing which seemed to fill the room followed, then there

Digitized by Microsoft®

came a burst of glorious triumphal music more grand than any of us had ever listened to, and we exclaimed, 'The Resurrection!' It thrilled to all our hearts.

"Nothing more was done for some time, and we decided upon putting out the lights in the rooms so as only to have that from the outside which came through the conservatory. When this was done the muslin curtains were draped round Mr. Home, a large portfolio stand having first been removed from the window by the spirits. It was moved some distance towards the door of the conservatory, and then *laid* down on the floor. Mr. Home was then raised from the ground enveloped in the curtains. We saw him through them—between us and the window; then it was spelled out 'See what earth does,' and the silk curtains were all drawn close over the windows and round Mr. Home, and all was dark and black as night. After a short time they were drawn back again, and Mr. Home was let down and came back to the table. Soon after this we observed the face of the master of the house, shining as if covered with silver light; after we had all remarked it, and commented upon it, the words were spelled out, 'He who giveth shall receive light.' The accordion was carried round the circle playing beautifully 'The Last Rose of Summer,' and several other airs; it rested on the head of our host, then on my shoulder, and went on to our hostess next to me, and played on her head. After this several pieces of martial music were played.

"The spirit of a child next came, whose mother had sent flowers to our hostess that morning. She gave us each a flower, and told Mr. Home to go and see her mother. Mr. Home was then raised up to the ceiling, which he touched, and regretted not having a pencil to make a mark there. When he came down, our host gave him one, hoping that he might be again raised, and in five minutes after he was so, and left a cross on the ceiling; but just before this took place, we saw his whole

Digitized by Microsoft®

face and chest covered with the same silver light which we had observed on our host's face. We had been sitting all this time at the table, and soon after our hands were touched and patted by other hands, and our brows touched by loved hands whose touch we knew. Shortly afterwards we heard the knocks and sounds die away in the distance out of doors, and *we felt* that it was all over. We had been sitting more than two hours. Our host and hostess had said repeatedly to each other during the evening, 'We never have had anything like this before;' and they certainly have seen more wonders in spiritualism than most people.

"That burst of music was still thrilling on our hearts. Nothing of mortal composition could equal it, and its sound was that of a fine organ. We greatly regretted that no one in the room could take down the notes. The wondrous effect of the sound of feet, and the sound of the hammer and nails running like a thread through the music, it is impossible that those who have not listened to it could understand; in the music itself also there was a mixture of tones out of my power to describe." * * *

Digitized by Microsoft®

CHAPTER VI.

LECTURE.—NOTICE IN "STAR."—FALSEHOODS IN "ALL THE YEAR ROUND."

ON the 15th February, 1866, I delivered a lecture, in Willis's Rooms, upon Spiritualism, in which I referred to the occurrence of various phenomena as traceable through all past history, and in speaking of the present time said:—

The question is often asked me, Why do not men of science take up the subject? To tell you the candid truth I have little faith in electrical experiments conducted by a Professor of Greek, and I think a Professor of Chemistry would smile at the mathematical Professor's endeavours to go through some intricate analysis. Every man in his place. I do not know why I should be called upon to pin my faith on what Mr. So-and-So may say of the soul, for the simple reason that he has made a discovery or two in the laws of nature.

It is, however, maintained by some that these wonders may all be accounted for by electricity. I will mention the name of one well known to every scientific scholar in England as well as in America, the late Professor Hare of Philadelphia, who had devoted more than half-a-century to scientific investigation, and who was perhaps the most distinguished electrician on the American continent.

Digitized by Microsoft®

He began a series of experiments with a view to corroborate Faraday's explanations: to this end he constructed apparatus of the most ingenious kind, of which in his book he has given diagrams, but he soon found that no mechanical or electrical theory could explain the facts; and that besides the merely physical manifestations an intelligence demonstrated itself beyond that of the medium and circle.

The result of Professor Hare's investigation was, that from having been all his life a materialist, he became a believer in God, in a spiritual world, in the future life of man, and, before his death, he openly proclaimed himself a Christian.

Another distinguished investigator was the Hon. John W. Edmonds, Judge of the Supreme Court of Appeal in the United States, one of the highest legal functionaries of the State; a man of acute intellect, cultivated by long and extensive legal and judicial practice. It would take too long to detail the course of patient and laborious investigation pursued by the Judge, aided by the circle of scientific and shrewd educated men, whom he associated with him in his inquiries. Suffice it to say that the examination was thoroughly exhaustive, and ended in the Judge becoming an entire convert. At all risks to his own popularity and position, he at once boldly proclaimed his conviction to the world, and on various occasions has given his experience, and defended with marked ability the truth of spiritualism.

I gave some descriptions of the various forms of medium development, continuing as follows:—

It was soon found that with certain persons spirits could so control the hand as to write by it without the intervention of the mind of the medium. In other cases, the hand is used to draw forms sometimes of things in the natural world, at others of things affirmed to be in the spiritual world. Again, drawings are executed conveying some lesson by symbol and correspondence. These draw-

Digitized by Microsoft®

ings are frequently done by the hands of persons ignorant of drawing, and in their normal state incapable of executing them. Spirit-drawing and writing have even been obtained without the intervention of mortal agency. Some instances of this are given by Baron Goldenstubbe, of Paris, in his work on "The Reality of Spirits, and the Marvellous Phenomena of their Direct Writings Demonstrated," in which he has furnished incontestable evidence that by this direct spirit-writing messages in Greek, Latin, Esthonian, German, Italian, English, and other languages, ancient and modern, have been obtained.

In his book sixty-seven fac-simile copies of these spirit-writings are given. Other persons again have, by no visible agency, been thrown into an unconscious or trance state, in which they have personated departed persons, frequently unknown to them, but in a way so striking as to be at once recognized by friends or relatives present.

More frequently persons in this unconscious condition of trance are impelled to respond to inquiries or to deliver unpremeditated discourses, sometimes on abstruse subjects, beyond the knowledge or normal capacity of the medium, who may be, and sometimes is, illiterate and uneducated; at other times languages are spoken of which the medium knows nothing.

In urging a calm and deliberate investigation, I said of Spiritualism, There is in it ample room and verge for all, a wide field of profitable research, if only it is conducted in the true spirit of inquiry—the spirit that is willing to study and learn of facts, however strange they may seem, however counter to the prejudices of philosophy; for philosophy, as well as ignorance, has its prejudices, and sometimes those of philosophy are the most inveterate.

To an investigation then of the laws and principles as well as of the phenomena of spiritualism, I earnestly invite your serious attention, and ask that it be conducted in

Digitized by Microsoft®

the spirit I have indicated. A vast ocean of truth, comparatively unexplored, lies before you.

I also said, I would not have you think for a moment that I am not aware of the many abuses which may arise from this contact with the spirit world. But God gives to every man the power of reason, and this it is in no way the province of spiritualism to supersede. So if a spirit were to give advice which our reason told us should not be followed, why should we pay any more attention to him, now that he is freed from the body, than we should if he were still moving among us on earth as formerly? All spirits are not perfect, and the moment we give up our reason either to men or spirits, that moment we wrong ourselves and insult our loving Father. I have known those who have taken up spiritualism, simply that they might be spoken of; and others that they might use it as a stepping-stone into society. I have known of the most gross impostures carried on, and in every case have exposed them; and God being my helper, ever will do so. Of course, in cases like these, I have much to contend with, even from my best friends: they say, "It is not your place; let others do it." I feel it to be my place, and when I see the pure and glorious truths I advocate drawn down, and made a mockery of by the mob, I will lift up my voice, and say, "This is not spiritualism;" and if they will prove it to be so, then I wish to have nothing to do with it, for it is a dark and damning error, and the sooner pure truth-seekers leave it the better. There is no doctrine which is without its abuses, and which is not abused by outsiders. Slander is of earth, and will die; truth is of God, and will live.

It has been argued that insanity is a natural result of the belief. I have been as much and more in a position to deny this statement than any man living. I have had repeated *séances* with various crowned heads. I have been with the peasant in his cabin, with the peer in his palace. I have travelled over a fair part of Russia,

Digitized by Microsoft®

Germany, Italy, France, and Switzerland. My every-day life has been with believers and investigators, and I can stand before you this evening, and solemnly declare that I never have seen any person insane from its effects. At the end of the year 1853, and the beginning of 1854, I was on a visit in Hartford, Connecticut, to a clergyman who is now a bishop. The state statistics gave as inmates of the Hartford Insane Retreat, thirty-seven from being spiritualists. On the very afternoon in which we first saw this statement, my friend was to read prayers at the asylum. I accompanied him, and asked the superintendent how many patients were there who had been rendered insane by spiritualism. Without a moment's hesitation he replied, "*Not one.*" This little fact is, to my way of thinking, rather significant, showing to what base ends the opponents of spiritualism may resort to make their story good.

I have no wish to make my lecture a ludicrous one, which if I were to enter into some of the raciest forms of explaining, "how it's all done," it would most assuredly be. One or two of the last will suffice. When in Russia this autumn, on a visit to his majesty, it was told for a fact, that I had a great number of cats to sleep with me, and by this means became so charged with electricity, that the rappings were heard in my presence. Another, that I held my feet a long time in ice water, and then ran and sat by the Emperor, putting my feet in his hands, and so he thought he touched a corpse-like hand. It is currently reported that my feet are like monkey's feet, and that I can do as I please with them. Some of my friends have even asked to see my feet without shoes or stockings, that they might contradict this. Again, that it is a mental fluid, consisting of emanations from the person which take on the physical and mental characteristics of the individual automatic cerebration, acting upon the *odic* force of the medium and circle. These and many other fantastic, far-fetched, and inadequate explanations, which

Digitized by Microsoft®

in turn need explaining, have been from time to time put forth; each new hypothesis unkindly exploding its predecessors, and being in its turn exploded by a new one.

One thing however is worth pointing out—that while various able and distinguished men have written volumes to account for the phenomena by causes of purely mundane origin, *all* admit the reality of the facts. Those tyros who, with little or no knowledge of the subject, think themselves justified in denouncing the whole thing as imposture, ought surely (if not wholly deficient in modesty and common sense) to be arrested by the circumstance that scientific and learned men, sceptical as themselves, as to the super-mundane origin of the facts, have yet, after the fullest investigation, been constrained to concede their reality and genuineness.

I trust no one present will be led to misunderstand my having referred to the Bible to prove the truths of my belief. I have done so in all sincerity and with respect. I can find nowhere in Scripture that God's arm is shortened, nowhere that he has left man to his own devices, and the spiritualism I have seen points to Him the source of all, as the means of salvation. Why, if God be an everywhere present God, should not those who have loved us, and been mortals like ourselves, continue to watch over and care for us. Think again, that if God, who is all purity, can be near us, why should not they?

I believe in my heart, that this power is being spread more and more every day to draw us nearer to God. You ask if it makes us purer? My only answer is that we are but mortals, and as such liable to err; but it does teach, that the pure in heart shall see God. It teaches us that He is love, and that there is no death. To the aged it comes as a solace, when the storms of life are nearly over and rest cometh. To the young it speaks of the duty we owe to each other, and that as we sow, so shall we reap. To all it teaches resignation. It comes

Digitized by Microsoft®

to roll away the clouds of error, and bring the bright morning of a never-ending day.

A writer in the "Evening Star" described this lecture under the title of "An Evening with the Spiritualists," in which he sketched my portrait from his own special mirror as appears by the following extract:—

"On the platform were a table and desk, with a candle on each side; and in front of the platform were two rows of specially reserved seats, in which sat, among others, several ladies and gentlemen well, and deservedly well known in the literary and dramatic worlds. I am told they gave a convincing proof of their belief in spiritualism —they paid for their entrance tickets. Shortly after eight o'clock a slim, lithe gentleman, with pale face, light hair, and small dark eyes, stepped upon the platform, and we knew that before us was Mr. D. D. Home, the expounder and oftentimes the subject of the elevating influences of spiritualism. With dainty white fingers he spread out before him certain pages of manuscript, displaying as he did so the neatest of wristbands, while on his left hand sparkled a lustrous diamond every time he lifted his pocket-handkerchief. The spirits could find no fault with the perfectly respectable appearance of their professional advocate."

As the article, though written, as might be expected, from a sceptical point of view, was not unfair, and contained no other misrepresentation, I am willing to believe the gentleman who wrote it to be short-sighted, and to have had some mist on his spectacles when he imagined he saw my "*small dark eyes*," and I have to thank him, on the whole, for the fairness of his account. His narration contrasts strongly with a disgraceful article that appeared in "All the Year Round" for March 3rd, 1866, entitled "At Home with the Spirits." The writer in "All the Year Round" says:—

"Mr. Home did not depart from England until he had appointed a band of apostles to preach the gospel which

Digitized by Microsoft®

he came to found and proclaim. I trust I am not uncharitable in suspecting that, in his selection of persons, he aimed at a sort of parody of the original constitution of the Christian Mission. His chosen disciples were humble folks, flower-makers, and menders of shoes. These disciples, with the aid of converts in a higher sphere, have written his Testament in the pages of two periodicals devoted to spiritualism. In these journals we are presented with a record of Home's miracles, and those of his disciples. When Mr. Home took leave of his disciples, he was lifted up to the ceiling in their presence. Is this also a parody of a certain event in sacred history? When I come to notice the lecture which Mr. Home delivered the other evening at Willis's Rooms, the reader will be able to answer the question for himself.

"When Mr. Addison, who was said by the spiritualists to be a medium in spite of himself, offered Mr. Home fifty pounds if he could float in the air in his presence, Mr. Home escaped from the dilemma by declining the challenge; but the Davenports, too confident of their skill, submitted to a test and were found out. The complete exposure of this last form of spiritualism has worked a great change in the tactics of the apostles. Finding it no longer possible to cope with the band of detectors, who have made it their mission to meet and expose them on all occasions, they have dropped miracle working, and now confine themselves to preaching spiritualism as a new faith.

"On Thursday, the fifteenth of February, I attended Willis's Rooms to hear the apostle preach; but before I could bring myself under the influence of the new gospel, I was called upon to pay ten shillings and sixpence. 'Are there no five-shilling seats?' I asked. The answer was 'No; they are all gone; only a few half-guinea seats left.' I paid my half-guinea and entered the room, and found that there were plenty of five-shilling seats vacant, but only a few half-guinea ones. On coming

Digitized by Microsoft®

out I accused the man at the door of having (to use the mildest term) *deceived* me. He did not deny it; but said in excuse, that it was not his fault; he had been told to say there were no five-shilling seats.

"I will relate briefly what I heard and saw, and what was the impression left upon my mind.

"As Mr. Home takes credit for being a medium, with extraordinary powers of body and mind, he can scarcely object to a description of his person. He is a tall, thin man, with broad, square shoulders, suggestive of a suit of clothes hung upon an iron cross. His hair is long and yellow; his teeth are large, glittering, and sharp; his eyes are a pale grey, with a redness about the eyelids, which comes and goes in a ghostly manner as he talks. When he shows his glittering, sharp teeth, and that red rim comes round his slowly-rolling eyes, he is not a pleasant sight to look upon. His hands were long, white and bony, and you knew, without touching them, that they were icy cold. He stooped over his paper, and rarely looked up, except to turn his eyes towards heaven in an appeal to the Deity. The first part of the lecture was very dull and heavy, being all about the indestructibility of matter. Before this "head" was exhausted I counted fifteen members of the congregation who were fast asleep. After my experience at the pay-place it was rather startling to hear Mr. Home disclaiming all mercenary motives, and declaring that he had never received, and never would receive, money for his work. In a private circular to his friends he says, 'I need not tell you how important it is to me to have the support of my friends, not only as a comfort and encouragement to me, but as essentially aiding the cause in which they and I are deeply interested. Much, indeed, of *my own fortune* must depend on the issue of this experiment.' I leave the reader to reconcile this appeal with his disavowal of mercenary motives how he or she can.

"It was a contradiction to deny the truth of spirit

Digitized by Microsoft®

rapping, when every Sunday in church we declared our belief in the communion of saints. Such was the argument.

"When Mr. Home was in the middle of his statistics, Professor Anderson, the conjuror, rose from a back seat and said, 'That is wrong.' Said Mr. Home, 'When I have finished my lecture, I will hear what you have to say.' Accordingly, when the lecture was finished, the Professor walked up the room, ascended the platform, and began deliberately to take off his coat. Mr. Home, not liking the look of this proceeding, immediately hopped down from the platform and began distributing bills among his friends. But the conjuror had no intention of challenging Mr. Home to fisticuffs. He had merely taken off his great coat to give fuller play to his lungs in a meditated effort of oratory. But the congregation declined to listen to him. His first word was drowned in hisses and cries of 'Off, off.' He tried again and again to obtain a hearing, but in vain; and shouting at the top of his voice, 'Swindle! humbug! blasphemy!' &c., the conjuror was obliged to resume his coat and descend. He had not one friend in the room.

"Now what is the doctrine which Mr. Home propounds, and all these people subscribe to as a new article of faith? Boldly, this—that spiritualism, founded upon table-rapping, rope-tying, and banjo-playing in a cupboard, is *a means of man's salvation!* These are Mr. Home's own words."

From these extracts my readers can judge how much the writer related of "what he heard and saw," and how much of "the impression left on his mind." It is quite clear that by far the greater part of what he says consists of the impression *left* on his mind, no doubt, but which had existed there long previous to the lecture. Of this I should not complain, were it not that the "impression," whatever it may have been, has led him to make assertions, which, unfortunately, I must set down as impressions of falsehood. Perhaps this may be accounted for on the

Digitized by Microsoft®

supposition that the writer is a well-known writer of fiction, who naturally finds it not easy to adhere to mere facts, and this is very evident from the imaginative portrait which he has presented to his readers as my likeness, as I neither rejoice in the possession of yellow hair, pointed teeth, grey eyes, nor icy cold hands.

Can anything be more false than to say that my own words are "that spiritualism founded upon table-rapping, rope-tying, and banjo-playing in a cupboard, is a means 'of man's salvation.'" I never spoke such a sentence; I have never had anything to do with 'rope-tying and banjo-playing in a cupboard,' be these the tricks of spirits or others, and least of all have I ever said that spiritualism was founded on such manifestations. I maintain that the communion of the spirits who have departed this life, with those who still remain in their earthly bodies, is a most important means of man's salvation, and an agent of the Bible Society might as fairly be accused of stating that Mother Hubbard and the House that Jack built were on a par with Holy Writ because they were issued from the printing press, as I have been accused of the assertion above quoted.

With regard to Professor Anderson the writer says, "His first word was drowned in hisses and cries of 'Off, off.'" This is totally untrue, for the '*Professor*' was not interrupted until he had uttered a tolerably long tirade of abuse, unaccompanied by a word of argument or a statement of fact. It was not until it became painfully evident to all present that the 'Professor' was in a condition which rendered him unfit to stand before a public meeting that steps were taken to put an end to his speech, for which he appeared to have been preparing by leaving my lecture from time to time and resorting to a fountain of inspiration from which he constantly returned, with a flush on his countenance probably arising from anticipations of coming victory over me.

The following letter, of which no notice whatever was

Digitized by Microsoft®

taken, was written to the editor of "All the Year Round," with reference to this mendacious article:—

"My dear Mr. Wills,

"Will you let me enter my protest against a very false and scandalous libel which appears in "All the Year Round," and express my regret that you should be a party to its publication—you who know that such men as Robert Chambers, William Howitt, Professor De Morgan, myself, and a host of others, quite as intelligent and upright, are firm believers in phenomena called 'spiritualism.'

"No doubt you are fully free to cry such men down, however much you may respect and regard them—however much confidence you may have in their integrity and intellectual faculties—their capacity for judging, and their honesty in arriving at conclusions, but you are *not* free to let any contributor in your columns state that which he knows to be false, as does the writer of the article on Mr. D. D. Home.

"It is a mass of deliberate falsehood, and you ought to know it is so. I will not trouble you by going through it in proof; I will merely point to two assertions:—one, that he 'distributed bills' after the lecture — the other, that his circular declared 'that much of his own fortune must depend on the issue of this experiment.'

"In reference to the first of these two falsehoods I can only give you now my own assurance; that Home distributed no bills, having none to distribute. In regard to the second falsehood, I send you a copy of the only circular he issued. You will see for yourself how dishonourable and disgraceful has been the change of a word to give a totally different meaning to the sentence. The writer of that article, be he who he may, is a dishonest man, to say the least. He may have a right to criticise that of which he knows nothing, but he has no right to describe as dupes of an impostor, men, who I am very sure, many of them, are in all ways his betters, and far more fitted than he is to examine and judge.

Digitized by Microsoft®

"What pretence to right can such a man have who describes a person—much respected, at all events by many who are themselves respected—as 'seeking his daily bread by professions which he knows to be false, wicked and blasphemous.'

"Of course you have shot the arrow, and will let the barb stick; you will not show the other side. Most probably you will not even correct the scandalous misstatements to which I have drawn your attention—one of which is palpable, for here is the proof in this circular.

"You will not, I trust, be angry with me for writing you. Your contributor may, if he likes, think me a fool or a rogue, whichever he pleases; but I am sure you do not consider me one or the other.

"Ever faithfully yours,

"S. C. HALL."

The following passages are taken from a review of this article, which appeared in the "Spiritual Times," March 17, 1866:—

"'All the Year Round,' March 3, contains an article, 'At Home with the Spirits,' written in a free style, that is, with a latitude which gives the reins to fancy with a reckless disregard of fact. The writer commences by telling us that he is disposed to 'regard the apostles of startling and incredible doctrine rather as fools than rogues,' and takes credit to himself for impartiality, and assumes to have given all who have 'promulgated startling and incredible doctrine' a fair hearing, and never 'scoffed.' But now he is out of patience, evidently, for he doesn't scoff, but only calls us 'fools.' How we are to receive 'fair' treatment at his hands, being prejudged by him as 'fools,' we are at a loss to understand! We next come to a humourous anecdote, detailed, no doubt, in all its *minutiæ*, with exactitude, in which we are introduced to a Scotch shoemaker and his man, who took to phrenology and electro-biology, and forsook the lapstone. The shoemaker gets the credit of having been honest, but his

Digitized by Microsoft®

man whom he took about with him as a subject is credited with imposture. This anecdote is introduced to serve a double purpose—spin out the article, and clear the way for a stronger assault on spiritualism. But how can it affect electro-biology, which any ordinary person may prove a truth for himself?

"It is no discredit to a shoemaker to study mental science, and employ himself in its service; but it is discreditable for him to fabricate falsehood, or do anything that degrades his moral nature. We trust sincerely the writer in 'All the Year Round' has not *consciously* been guilty of this. That he has fabricated falsehood in dealing with spiritualism we shall, we think, be able to show. Let those who laugh with him help him out of it if they can. The 'fools,' we beg pardon, spiritualists, are 'tricksters,' but mostly 'credulous persons' who unwittingly help to practise the 'trick upon others.'

"Thus this moderate and exemplary writer deals with us as a body. But he is principally interested in Mr. Home and his late lecture at Willis's Rooms. The electro-biology 'trick' was found to be too mundane, and it became an 'object' to introduce 'a supra-mundane element.' Thus the writer in 'All the Year Round' persuades himself and his readers that a system of concerted humbug, commencing with electro-biology and ending with spiritualism was and is at work; and yet he admits 'the believers were chiefly persons moving in the upper circles of society, some of them distinguished for their high intellectual attainments.' Yet still these are, in the majority of instances, 'fools;' and what a miracle that such men as the Scotch shoemaker, who was made the dupe of his man—who practised a hoax to get rid of the stubborn necessity of lapstoning leather—could perform a work ending in making believers 'distinguished for their high literary attainments!' It is really surprising that men can write such twaddle. If a few charlatans, too lazy to 'stick to the last' can be credited with the whole

Digitized by Microsoft®

spiritualist 'delusion,' which numbers its adherents by millions, many of whom are among the upper and literary classes, it would appear that men of 'intellectual and literary attainments' are easily duped.

"Another anecdote is given of an author who was in the habit of consulting the spirits, but who, like many another author, went to his account early in life. Of course, it is hinted that his death was hurried through the excitement of 'spirit-rapping *séances*.' Authors are not generally long-lived; many of them indulge too much in evening parties—some of them smoke and drink excessively, almost all of them live a life of excitement of some kind. Much of the excitement attendant upon authorship is unavoidable. If the author mentioned *did* indulge too much in 'spirit-rapping *séances*,' his fate should be a warning to the intemperate. Over-indulgence in eating, drinking, or thinking is to be condemned and must be expiated; but it by no means proves that eating, drinking, and thinking are in themselves evil.

"Mr. Home is charged with appearing amongst us and choosing disciples, after the manner of Christ, from persons of very humble origin; and he is further said to have taken leave of his disciples by being lifted to the ceiling in their presence. This may be fine writing, and very grateful to the majority of the readers of 'All the Year Round,' but it is not altogether true. Mr. Home never chose a disciple; he had something else to do. He was lifted to the ceiling in presence of people of 'exalted position and high literary attainments,' and no flower-makers and vendors of shoes that we know of ever saw him float. 'When Mr. Addison offered Mr. Home fifty pounds if he could float in the air in his presence,' says this truth-loving writer, 'Mr. Home escaped from the dilemma by declining the challenge.' This offer, we are authorised to state, was never made known to Mr. Home; in fact, Mr. Home knows nothing whatever of Mr. Addison. Besides, had the offer been made, Mr. Home would have acted

Digitized by Microsoft®

wisely in 'declining the challenge.' It is one of the most convincing proofs of the spiritual agencies at work in the process of levitation, that he is only raised in the air occasionally, and never at his own dictation.

"The writer is not at all particular in his manner of maltreating Mr. Home and the spiritualists. He presents a word-portrait of some imaginary monstrosity, which he desires his readers to accept for Mr. Home. He tells us that he was *deceived*, on entering Willis's Rooms, by being told that there were no five-shilling seats left when there were several. This affair of the manager he mildly charges upon Mr. Home.[1] We can now understand the motive of the animus which has set his pen to work on this subject. To give a specimen of his regard for the truth, he declares that before the first part of Mr. Home's discourse was finished, he 'counted fifteen members of the congregation who were fast asleep.' Is there another person besides this writer who will state this? We think not. The audience, according to the writer's own admissions, consisted almost entirely of Mr. Home's friends. Is it likely they would fall asleep in the middle of his lecture?

"With a view to make Mr. Home appear mercenary—although he stated at the commencement of his lecture that he had never exercised, and he never would exercise, his medium powers for money—the discomfited writer, violating the common rules of privacy, misquotes Mr. Home's circular to his friends by putting the word *fortune* for *future*. 'Much, indeed, of my own *future* must depend on the issue of this experiment.' 'All the Year Round,' in italics says, '*My own fortune.*' If fifteen of the congre-

[1] We have taken the trouble to enquire of the manager about this matter, and we learn that all the five-shilling tickets were sold, and that those seats which the writer saw vacant were half-guinea seats. And we are assured that a seat would have been offered him gratis, with the other reporters, had he only shown his card, and stated that he was one of the press.

Digitized by Microsoft®

gation were not asleep, surely this writer was nearly so, or he must have purposely made this alteration.

"A lady is said to have gone up to Mr. Home, and asked him to 'settle' with her; was this meant for 'sit'? Professor Anderson next appears on the scene, and when he is described as mounting the platform and pulling off his coat, Mr. Home is described as hopping off the platform, and distributing bills amongst the audience. Surely the writer *must* have been very nearly asleep. Mr. Home had no bills to distribute, and he did not leave the platform until he had listened to a *tirade* of abuse from the Professor. Such is a very rapid glance at the article in 'All the Year Round.' When the writer next takes up his pen to deal with spiritualism, we trust he will recollect the words, 'A lying lip is an abomination to the Lord.'

"Rarely has an article been written against spiritualism which contained so many glaring falsehoods as this:—

"'Now, what is the doctrine which Mr. Home propounds, and all these people subscribe to as a new article of faith? Boldly this—that spiritualism, founded upon table-rappings, rope-tying, and banjo-playing in a cupboard, is a *means of man's salvation*—these are Mr. Home's own words.' The writer must have been nearly deaf as well as nearly asleep. Mr. Home said nothing of the kind. He did say that a knowledge of the reality of spirit phenomena leads the atheist and materialist to the higher knowledge of immortal life, or something of the kind.

"Fancy this writer being consistent, and saying of the Christian church—baptismal fonts, communion tables, surplices, and ceremonials, *are means of man's salvation*, leaving out altogether the Spirit of Christ. This would be doing by orthodoxy what he does by spiritualism.

Digitized by Microsoft®

CHAPTER VII.

Spiritual Athenæum—Identity—Guardians of Strength—Spirit Mesmerism.

IN the latter part of 1866, a number of gentlemen interested in spiritualism decided upon the formation of a limited society, relating to which the following circular was printed:—

"Many spiritualists and friends of spiritualism, considering that a place in London is greatly needed where they may frequently meet, have resolved to establish a society under the name of The Spiritual Athenæum, at No. 22, Sloane Street, Knightsbridge. At present, many persons who have been largely gifted with 'spiritual gifts' are without the power to make them known for the general good; while it is certain that several distinguished foreigners, thus gifted, have visited and left London without making the acquaintance of a single spiritualist.

"The society proposes to meet the difficulties that impede the progress of spiritualism, by the establishment to which they draw your attention,—where subscribers will have the advantage of intercourse with mediums who may either be found, or who visit England from America, France, and other countries; where books and periodical works in various languages may be received and circulated; where occasional lectures shall be given (written

Digitized by Microsoft®

papers being sometimes printed, perhaps quarterly, as 'Transactions'); where a system of useful correspondence may be carried out; where 'experiences' may be communicated and recorded; where, in brief, there shall be a rallying point for spiritualists and their friends for the interchange of information and for consultation; and where 'sittings,' under judicious arrangements, shall be regularly held with Mr. Home and other mediums.

"It is proposed to appoint Mr. D. D. Home as resident Secretary at the Institution. He will act under the guidance and direction of a council and an executive committee, one of whom will act as honorary treasurer.

"We believe that Mr. Home's mediumship (free of all conflicting influences) may thus be made wider and more practical in its beneficial effects. We believe, also, that other mediums may be thus enabled essentially to elucidate and advance spiritualism, and that, hence, investigations into the subject may lead to convictions of its truth.

"It will be a leading duty of the executive committee, acting with the council, to make such arrangements as shall secure facilities for healthy, useful, and instructive communion to those who seek, as well as those who are willing to give, information 'concerning spiritual gifts;' while promoting social intercourse, aiming at loftier and holier objects, checking the spread of materialism, upholding the truths and extending the influence of Christianity, and bringing closer the bonds of peace and love among mankind, inculcating by another power—acting in accordance with Holy Writ, and co-operating with the Christian teacher—duty to God and to our neighbour.

"We therefore ask you to give effect to our plan, by agreeing to subscribe *5l. 5s.* annually, so long as it shall be satisfactory to you to do so, in order to establish the Spiritual Athenæum. No other responsibility of any kind will be incurred by subscribers. We wish to limit the number of subscribers to one hundred, but we believe that eighty will be sufficient to meet all requirements—such

Digitized by Microsoft®

as rent of rooms, the supply of a library, moderate refreshments at *conversazioni*, and the expenses of the secretary.

"The following gentlemen have consented to act as the council; those who are thus indicated (*) forming the executive committee. It will be observed that several of the members are practical men of business, and therefore, that a wise superintendence will be exercised over the proceedings of the society. With the council several ladies of position and influence will be associated.

"PRESENT LIST OF COUNCIL.

(*To which additions will be made.*)

G. Brocklebank, Esq., Lombard Street, and Greenwich.
Dr. Elliotson, Davies Street, Berkeley Square.
Capt. Drayson, R.A., Woolwich.
Count P. de Gendre, 68, Westbourne Terrace.
H. G. Gibson, Esq., 33, Mark Lane, and Mecklenburg Square.
John Hampden Gledstanes, Esq., London and Paris.
J. M. Gully, Esq., M.D., Malvern.
*S. C. Hall, Esq., F.S.A., Barrister-at-Law, 8, Essex Villas, Kensington.
Henry T. Humphreys, Esq., 1, Clifford's Inn.
*H. G. Jencken, Esq., (*Honorary Treasurer*), Barrister-at-Law, Kilmorey House, Norwood.
Ion Perdicaris, Esq., Gloucester Terrace, Campden Hill.
*H. Rudall, Esq., 9, Great Tower Street, and the Grove, Camberwell.
*H. W. Spratt, Esq., Walbrook Buildings, and South Villas, Greenwich.
*E. C. Sterling, Esq., 104, Sloane Street.
The Rev. J. G. Wood, M.A., Belvedere, Kent.

22, *Sloane Street, Knightsbridge.*

During the perfecting of arrangements connected with the "Spiritual Athenæum," some of the members of the council met, from time to time, in Sloane Street, and at

Digitized by Microsoft®

times some interesting manifestations occurred. Although each of these possessed its special interest for them who witnessed it, few of them call for any notice. I shall however briefly relate the circumstances connected with one which occurred at a preliminary meeting of the council.

On this occasion Mr. S. C. Hall, Mr. Jencken, Mr. Perdicaris, and Mr. Humphreys, with myself, had met, and, after some time, while they were discussing matters of business, I saw a spirit who gave me her name, and said she was the daughter of Dr. Robert Chambers. Mr. S. C. Hall, who was acquainted with the family, did not believe that Dr. Robert Chambers had had a daughter of that name. I said that we might be certain that he had, and as I said so three raps sounded on the floor. As the object of communication was that Mr. Hall should write to Dr. R. Chambers concerning certain matters, he undertook to do so, though rather unwillingly, and it was not till several weeks later that he ascertained that the name was correct. Even then Dr. R. Chambers was not communicated with, and at a *séance* at Mr. S. C. Hall's, at Essex Villas, Campden Hill, this spirit came to the circle and expressed to me her regret that Mr. S. C. Hall had not written to her father as requested. She detailed the fresh position of affairs with respect to what she desired to have done, and was accompanied by the spirit of a sister who had left earth at an early age, and gave the words "Pa, love." Dr. Robert Chambers was written to, and in reply wrote: "The whole of the communications accord with actual facts. The words, 'Pa, love,' were the last words she pronounced in life." In a letter to myself, written also about this time, Dr. R. Chambers says, after relating an event which confirmed a message sent him, "So you see Mary was right about the imminence of that step, of which I knew nothing."

The formal opening of the Spiritual Athenæum took

Digitized by Microsoft®

place on the 4th January, 1867, and the following notice concerning it appeared in "The Spiritual Magazine":—

"OPENING OF THE SPIRITUAL ATHENÆUM.—The opening meeting of the Spiritual Athenæum took place on Friday evening, January 4. Mr. S. C. Hall, F.S.A., opened the meeting by an excellent introductory address. A brief paper by Dr. Gully was read; and Mr. D. D. Home Lyon lectured on, and described 'Spiritual Drawings,' a number of which, by various persons, were laid on the tables. The remainder of the evening was occupied by conversation concerning the prospects and progress of spiritualism. The meeting was well attended, and highly gratifying to all who took part in it.

One result of the establishment of the Spiritual Athenæum was to attract the attention of spiritualists in various parts of the kingdom, and I received letters from several quarters relating the progress which spiritualism was making, and giving accounts of numbers of circles organised for the purpose of investigating the subject. My own loss of health in 1867, together with other circumstances, fully explained in connection with the Lyon lawsuit, led to the Athenæum being closed.

The whole history of my acquaintance with Mrs. Lyon being fully detailed in the account of the lawsuit which commences in a subsequent chapter, I pass it by for the moment and proceed here to give accounts of a few *séances* which occurred in 1867.

The following account of the appearance of "Guardians of Strength" is worthy of being recorded, the manifestation of such spirits being of rare occurrence; it appeared in "The Spiritual Magazine" for March, 1867, from the pen of Dr. Gully, Malvern.

"About the 28th of last November, my friend Mr. Home, being in a trance, was examining my body with a view of ascertaining the state of health in which it was. All who have seen Mr. Home in this state of trance, are aware how clearly he sees and communicates with spirits

Digitized by Microsoft®

that have passed from the body. And marvellous and marvellously beautiful have been the communications made by them, through him, which it has been my fortune to hear. The gestures, the most trivial actions of bodily life, the mode of walking and speaking, the voice, the infirmities of persons who have passed away long before he was born, and concerning whose peculiarities in all these particulars Mr. Home had not the least possible means of obtaining any knowledge, are all repeated by him when in this state with an accuracy of detail which leaves no doubt, either that he is at the moment possessed by the spirit whose earthly characteristics he is delineating, or that he is receiving from them or from other spirits impressive communications which enable him to reproduce them. On the occasion referred to, Mr. Home stated that the spirits were saying that there was something wrong in the electrical state of my body, and he added, 'They seem to say that glass cups under your bed would be of use.' These cups were procured the very next day by those who were anxious about my health; they were, in fact, very thick glass saltcellars, with a cup-like depression in the centre, just sufficient to receive the end of each post of the bedstead; the circle round this depression was certainly one inch and a quarter thick. The object of this apparently trivial detail will appear afterwards. The glasses were placed one under each post of the bedstead on the 30th of November last.

"On the evening of that day Mr. Home, who was my visitor, had a *séance* at which five of us were present. After some defective physical phenomena about the table, the alphabet was called for, and we were told, 'We are not able to manifest our love to-night. Come to-morrow night at half-past nine.' We therefore broke up the *séance*. The real and striking manifestations were destined to be made in my bed-room that same night.[1]

[1] I should say that Mr. Home's bed-room was next to mine and separated by a wall of only slight thickness.

Digitized by Microsoft®

"I went to bed at twelve o'clock, having been writing up to that time. As I passed along the corridor of the bedrooms I had the most distinct intimations of the presence of spiritual beings, and at one moment felt as if I were jostled by a distinct bodily agent. Something of the kind is frequently experienced whilst Home is staying with me by more than one member of my household. I went to bed; but I had just laid my head on the pillow when numerous and loud raps began to be heard in different parts of the room, but especially on the right side of the head of the bed, where hung the portraits of several of those whom I loved and have lost. I have often had trifling manifestations of the kind in my room when Home was asleep in the adjoining room; but these came with a rapidity, strength and multiplication far greater than I had ever experienced. Still they did not discompose me: I knew the raps (all but one) perfectly well; they were those of my father, brother and child; and they gave me a feeling of happiness rather than of agitation. Under this influence I was sinking off into sleep, when all at once I was horribly roused by the noise of two *tremendous blows* administered in rapid succession on the *left* hand post of the head of the bedstead. They were not raps; they were such blows, and produced such noise as if an iron poker had been wielded by some brawny arms and made to descend with all their force upon a large table or on the sides of a large tub. They shook the bedstead violently; and, as in all my experiences of spiritual phenomena I had never heard anything which had the smallest approach to this exhibition of power, they shook my nerves also, rousing me moreover, as they did suddenly, from drowsy quietude. I started up in bed, and shouted to Home, in the next room, to come and be witness of what was going on. After four loud calls, he answered; then hurriedly dressed, and came into my room, which was in profound darkness. In a few words I told him what had happened, and begged him to lie down outside the bed, and remain

Digitized by Microsoft®

to see what further might happen. He had not done so longer than five minutes when two more blows, exactly similar to the former in force and noise, were given upon the *right* hand post of the head of the bed. Upon hearing these, Home was, like myself, agitated; but he told me that he had no doubt that the spirit was one of those protectors of man called 'Guardians of Strength;' that every man had such a guardian; that their office was to shield the body from destructive agents, especially from disease; that they were spirits of a very elevated order, and never manifested themselves save on occasions when something threatened the life of the body which they protected; that they never communicated messages, and that they had never been known to give more than five raps or blows. Further, he said that in all his experiences of spiritualism he had only met with this kind of spirit on four occasions. When he had told me all this, all the spirits present gave affirmative raps. I asked, 'Does that mean that what Home has told me is correct?' Again affirmative raps from all. I asked my father's spirit, 'Who is this powerful spirit?' Answer with the alphabet, 'It is your Guardian of Strength.' No sooner had this reply been given, than the *fifth* blow was administered as before to the *left* head-post of the bedstead, making the *third* blow at that point, and *two* at the right side. I confess to having felt very great agitation on the occasion of this last blow; my legs became cold up to the hips, and my head hot and throbbing. Home also was not a little dismayed, and became presently still more so when, after a few minutes of silence, he said to me, 'My dear friend, I don't like these occurrences at all; my wife's spirit has just said to me, "There is danger." I immediately said to my father, 'Tell me what danger there is.' The reply was, 'Danger to you.' I asked, 'To body or soul?' 'To your body.' Whilst all this was going on, we heard the spirits moving articles about the room, and rustling the curtains of the canopy, and the silk of the *duvet* which covered the bed. In the

Digitized by Microsoft®

thick darkness also, we *both* plainly saw, as it were, a wall of luminous matter all along the right side of the bedstead, and I asked, 'Are those spirits standing around the bed?' Answer from all, 'Yes.' 'Are you looking upon us?' 'Yes, as you are looking upon us.' They all gave me their names; but, as I have said, there was one whose raps I did not recognize, and these were very sharp, quick, and merry. I asked this one specially to give me his name; the answer was given, 'M. L——,' and at the same time a large framed medallion cast of a woman's profile, which for many a year has hung near the head of my bed, was rapped quickly upon the wall. Astonished, I said, 'What? is that Margaret L——?' Answer, 'Yes: I love you always.' 'All these thirty-nine years?' 'Yes; and I must come *now*.' 'Because I am in danger?' 'Yes.' Now, it is necessary that I should let the reader into a private episode of my life. The Margaret L—— here spoken of was my first boyish love: like most loves, ours 'did not run smooth.' We were both eighteen years old when she was taken ill, and I went for the first time to the University. At her urgent entreaty I was permitted to go to her bedside to say 'good-bye' on leaving. I never saw her again: a simple illness became complicated, and she passed away six weeks after my last sight of her. I have never forgotten the love and the distress of that time. Years afterwards I visited her tomb, and found a very accurate profile likeness of her in a marble medallion on it: I had a cast taken from this, and it has been in my bedroom ever since. It is thirty-nine years since she passed away; and, in my experiences of spiritualism during the last ten years, I have often wondered that she did not manifest herself to me; probably her spirit is in higher spheres, and only became manifested to me like that of my Guardian of Strength, on an urgent occasion. To return. I have said that the spirits in the room were moving about. After the fifth blow of the Guardian of Strength, they became still more restless;

Digitized by Microsoft®

they pressed our arms and legs, and my child stroked my face lovingly. Yet the air seemed to be charged with magnetic fluid; we could scarcely breathe; as I have said, my head was full and hot, and my lower extremities cold. When the whole physical condition seemed to have become no longer tolerable, the Guardian of Strength came upon the bed, and I felt him, as palpably and certainly as I ever felt a flesh hand, handle my legs from hips to feet, pressing them firmly but equally all down,—a sort of shampooing, in fact. He continued to do this for nearly a quarter of an hour (I feeling his general form on the bed just as assuredly as I felt his hand on my lower extremities), until the limbs became hot, and suddenly burst into a profuse warm perspiration, which immediately relieved my head. He then passed across the bed, drew the silken *duvet* after him, and we heard it rustle as it fell to the ground on the left hand side of the bed. Home then said to me, 'If it be really your Guardian of Strength, and if he will touch us you will find that his touch is icy cold: they always are cold.' The operations of this spirit had completely restored my physical and mental comfort, so that I directly said, 'If you be my Guardian of Strength, will you touch Home and myself?' In a flash of time Home called out to me, 'Oh, his hand is on my forehead like a plat of ice—how cold?' I said, 'I hope that you will touch me too.' Immediately the points of his fingers were pressed upon the crown of my head, which was covered with a cotton nightcap. I observed, "I don't find it so cold,' whereupon the spirit placed the whole inner side of his hand along the top of my head, so that the finger ends rested on my bare forehead, and certainly no ice could be colder. He rested his hand so, but also patted my head in the most kindly manner repeatedly. Upon this I said, 'You don't mean me any harm, do you?' The answer 'No' was given by pulling the tassel of my cap once. I then said, 'I dare say you mean me good?' Reply—'Yes,' by pulling the tassel three times. After

Digitized by Microsoft®

the third pull he drew the cap off my head altogether, though my head was resting heavily on the pillow, and threw it on Home's face, from whence he immediately withdrew it, to throw it at mine. I dare say he thought us very stupid not to understand his meaning hitherto, and in all these manifestations; but it is certain that neither of us had the slightest idea what the danger was, or whence it was to come. I may add that after I had been assured by my father that the danger was not to my *soul*, I ceased to speculate much about it. At the above point the spirit pushed my left shoulder strongly, so as to make me say to Home, 'He is driving me towards you for some purpose or other,' whereupon Home exclaimed, 'and he is pulling me out of bed by the right shoulder;' and sure enough, when I took hold of Home I felt that something was pulling him away from me. These manifestations caused me to say, 'It is plain now that we are to get off the bed altogether, in which case I will light the candle,' which was done, and it discovered the towel horse moved out of its place, the towels thrown about, the medallion on the wall all awry, slippers and boots scattered about the room, and the *duvet* lying on the floor, giving abundant explanation of the bustling sounds which we had heard in the darkness.

"Still, where was the danger? We tried the canopy of the bed, but it was firm enough in its place. At length in looking around and around, Home spied the glass cups underneath the bedposts, and asked what they were there for, having no remembrance of course, of what he had said in his trance two days before. Explaining to him that he had himself suggested them, he asked the spirits present, 'Are these glass cups wrong?' Loud affirmative raps from four or five quarters. 'Shall we remove them?' The same raps as before. We proceeded to remove them, lifting the bedstead with some exertion, but it was readily done for the two lowest posts and the *right* upper one. The two glasses of the lower posts were complete, but the

Digitized by Microsoft®

glass under the *right* upper post, which had received *two* out of the *five* strong blows, was found broken into three pieces. We passed to the *left* upper post, which had received *three* blows, but in consequence of a heavy chest of drawers, whose proximity left only a space of five or six inches between it and the bedstead, it was impossible to do more than touch the glass under that post, and quite impossible to lift the bedstead therefrom. As we approached this side of the bed, I holding a lighted candle, we both simultaneously exclaimed, 'There is a large luminous mass in the corner—that must be the Guardian Spirit.' I saw it as plainly and undoubtedly as I see the hand that is writing these words. That some powerful agent was there became evident from what followed. Home said, 'We can't get near enough to this glass to lift the bed and remove it,' when immediately, without our touching the bed at all, the whole mass was raised without any touch of his or mine, and Home withdrew the glass, which had received *three* blows, and which we found to be in four pieces, one of which was almost in a state of powder, so thoroughly had it been broken. This done, we heard and saw no more of the Guardian of Strength; and when, on lying on the bed again to wait for what might happen, we asked about him, the spirits told us that he had gone away. And certainly we might have guessed that some potent agency had left the room, for the atmosphere, from being exciting and stifling (like the air just before a thunder-storm), calmed down, and our physical sensations were totally changed from tension to placidity. After which my father said, 'Good night; I must go.' 'Are you all going?' 'No; Dan' (my brother) 'and Fanny' (my child) 'will remain with you.' And so, after a little more talk about these strange occurrences, Home went to his own room again, having been in mine upwards of an hour and a half. When he had gone, I picked up the silk *duvet* and spread it over the bed, into which I got, with the hope of sound sleep, after such tumult. It was not yet to be. During an

Digitized by Microsoft®

hour and a quarter I was dozing off repeatedly; but each time I was roused by two or three, or four loud raps on the floor of the room. At length, between three and four A.M., worried and feverish with this frequent awakening, I impatiently threw the *duvet* off the bed. The act was followed by a shower of approving raps. Then, for the first time, I perceived what these awakenings meant; and I said, 'Was I to throw the *duvet* off the bed?' Answer, 'Yes,' and with the alphabet, 'Good night.' In a quarter of an hour I was asleep.

"In subsequent communication with spirits of my own family, I was informed that had I on that night gone to sleep with the electricity of my body isolated by the glass cups underneath the bedstead, and the silk *duvet* above me, I should have had a seizure in the head, and most probably have passed away in it: and that the emergency was very pressing, so as to render the presence and aid of the Guardian of Strength necessary. In answer to questions they also told me that these guardians always had strong sympathy with those over whom they watched: that it was not simply because they were sympathetic that they became guardians; but that they are specially chosen by God for each individual. Further, I was informed that in a serious illness through which I had passed on a former occasion, this same guardian had been much occupied with me.

"The question arises, How came spirits to recommend these glass cups, when subsequently it became necessary to rescue me from them? I never got any decided answer to this; but one night, some time afterwards, my friend Home, in a trance, exclaimed, 'Oh, you remember the glass cups and that night? They say that the whole was contrived for your good, and to impress upon you.' And most assuredly it did impress upon me; it is impossible to experience anything more real, palpable, visible, audible, than the facts of that night! it is impossible, without the denial of all sense, external and internal, to

Digitized by Microsoft®

refuse belief in the intelligent, extra-corporeal agency at work on that occasion. Of the existence of such agency I had long ceased to have any real doubt; but I may have speculated and spun theories to account for spiritual manifestations in some other way, and it may have been to put a stop to these that this marvellous night was contrived for strongly impressing me with the reality of the interference.

"Regarding the existence, attributes, and duties of these Guardians of Strength, I have been unable to find any account in any works on spiritualism to which I have access. M. Kardec has a chapter on Guardian Spirits, but nothing is said of the special act of guardianship over the bodily health by a specially appointed spirit."

The following instance of direct spirit mesmerism will also be interesting; it appeared in "Human Nature," for September, 1867.

"Sir,—The following is an account of some remarkable phenomena of Direct Spirit Mesmerism, witnessed by myself and others at my house early in the evening of the 8th of August, and I should be glad if you could give publicity to my letter—copy of which I have forwarded to the 'Spiritual Magazine' with a similar request.

"It is necessary to premise that Mr. D. D. Home, the medium present, had been staying with me for some short time, and that owing to the state of health of Mrs. Jencken, who had been seized with paralysis, I had determined not to allow any *séances* to be held. On the evening in question, however, I yielded at the request of my mother, and we sat round a small square table in front of the sofa, Mrs. Hennings, our neighbour, making up the party of four.

"We had not been seated many minutes when raps were heard in different parts of the room, the table was tilted and raised straight off the ground; numerous raps were then heard under the table, in the drawer—which was pulled out and replaced; a cold current of air then passed

Digitized by Microsoft®

over our hands,—spirit hands touched several of us on our hands and knees,—a hand appeared between myself and Mr. D. D. Home, but only for a moment. We then observed the form of a hand under the shawl Mrs. Jencken had drawn across her knees. A pause then ensued followed by the phenomenon of "Direct Spirit Mesmerism," and to record which is the special object of my present communication.

"At first we heard the rustling of Mrs. Jencken's dress as though a hand was rudely moved over it; we then noticed a hand making mesmeric passes down the right side of Mrs. Jencken; her knee was then grasped, and we distinctly heard the tapping, kneading sound of shampooing a patient. Mrs. Jencken, who remained perfectly calm and composed throughout the process, described her sensation with great precision, observing that she felt as if a powerful hand were making passes down her paralysed side, almost causing pain. Her hand was then seized by, as she described it, a soft, warm hand, rubbed and stretched out with sufficient force to leave a red mark on her hand and wrist. She farther said, that she felt as if an electric stream had passed through her, causing every limb to glow. The whole process lasted about eight to ten minutes, and resulted in the restoration of the use of the paralysed limb and side of Mrs. Jencken, who all but immediately called our attention to the fact of her being able to move her right arm and hand, hitherto perfectly paralysed. On essaying to rise from her chair, she found to her great joy that she could walk, and ever since her convalescence has steadily progressed.

"Fortunately during the *séance*, Mr. Jones of Enmore Park, joined our circle, at which I was much pleased, as I felt it desirable that a farther witness should be present to testify to the truth of the statement I am recording.

"Other and very marked phenomena were produced that evening. Mrs. Hennings' hand was repeatedly touched and grasped; her chair seized and drawn back and half

Digitized by Microsoft®

turned round. Mr. Jones was also touched by a hand. A voice was distinctly heard to pass through the room, the note being not unlike the wail of a female voice. But I will not burden you with an account of these phenomena; my object being to confine myself to the description of the phenomenon of Direct Spirit Mesmerism.

"I may, however, add that Mr. D. D. Home is in full power, and that during his stay at my house very remarkable phenomenon occurred.

"Mrs. Jencken is now occupied in writing a statement of what took place, anxious that a document should be placed on record to prove at some future time the possibility of Direct Spirit Mesmerism. "H. D. JENCKEN."

"Kilmorey House, 15th August, 1867."



Digitized by Microsoft®

CHAPTER VIII.

New Manifestations—Elongation—Voices—Perfumes.

DURING the latter part of 1867, several novel manifestations occurred in my presence, accounts of which appeared from time to time in the "Spiritual Magazine," "Human Nature," &c. I here give some of these with the names of those present, and those of the writers of the accounts. The first of these which I give occurred in Great Malvern, at Dr. Gully's, and is recorded in a letter from Mr. H. D. Jencken to "Human Nature," for November, 1867, as follows:—

"The party present had only incidentally met, and owing to a prohibition being laid upon Mr. Home by his medical man, against trying his strength, no *séance* was attempted. I name this as characteristic. Spiritual presence, however, soon made itself heard, by raps in different parts of the room, and the movement of the furniture told of the presence of the invisibles. The library in which the party had met communicated with the hall, and the door having been left half open, a broad stream of light from the burners of the gas lamp lit up the room. At the suggestion of one of the party, the candles were removed. The rapping which had till then been heard in different parts of the room, suddenly made a pause, and

Digitized by Microsoft®

then the unusual phenomenon of the appearance of spirit forms manifested itself. The opening of the half-closed door was suddenly darkened by an invisible agency, the room becoming pitch dark. Then the wall opposite became illumined, the library being now lit up by a luminous element, for it cannot be described otherwise. Between those present and the opposite and now illumined wall two spirit forms were seen, their shadowy outline on the wall well-defined. The forms moved to and fro, and they made an effort to speak. The articulation, however, was too imperfect to permit of the meaning of the words being understood. The darkening which had obscured the half-closed door was then removed, and the broad light from the hall lamp re-appeared looking quite dim in comparison with the luminous brilliancy of the light that had passed away. Again the room became darkened, then illumined, and a colossal head and shoulders appeared to rise from the floor, visible only by the shadow it cast upon the illumined wall. What added to the interest, was the apparent darkening and lighting up of the room at will, and that repeatedly, the library door remaining half open all the while. The time occupied by these phenomena was perhaps five to ten minutes, the manifestations terminating quite abruptly."

Another remarkable *séance* took place in Mr. S. C. Hall's house, Essex Villas, Campden Hill, at about the same period, and I give it from the notes of Mr. H. T. Humphreys, who was present, as follows:—

"Hearing from Mr. S. C. Hall that Mr. Home was at his house for a day or two and wished to see me, I went out to Essex Villas in the evening, and after having had some conversation with him and others who had also called, the other visitors left. We were shortly afterwards —that is to say, Mr. and Mrs. S. C. Hall, Mr. Home, and myself—standing in the recess leading to the conservatory, when Mrs. Hall remarked that it was a long time since they had had a *séance*. Mr. Home at once replied that he

Digitized by Microsoft®

was unwell, and had been talking about matters which excited him, and could not sit. He then sat down to the piano, and was about to open it when a shower of little raps were heard inside the instrument. 'Do you hear the raps?' he said. 'Come, we will have a sitting.' We four then sat down, Mr. and Mrs. S. C. Hall being seated opposite each other, and I opposite to Mr. Home, round a small kettle-drum octagon table covered with velvet, the legs being screwed into the top. After a short pause raps were heard on the table, which was tilted and raised straight up in the air, next rolled into the lap of Mrs. S. C. Hall, then into my lap; after which it was placed on my foot, and balanced to and fro whilst in that position; it finally turned itself upside down, the top being at about the height of our heads, and the legs in the air above. Raps were then heard, and a sentence was spelt out, to the effect that *this* was the present condition of spiritualism, but that it would soon come—at this word the table was again placed on its legs in our midst, thus signifying the word—'right,' and a guess as to this meaning was answered by affirmative raps. Mr. Home then rose from his chair, impelled he said to do so, and walked to and fro. Then followed the extraordinary phenomenon of the lengthening out and shortening of the medium's body; a phenomenon not unknown to those who have followed this inquiry, but nevertheless very remarkable, and equally unaccountable. Mr. Home said he felt as if his hair was being pulled, but without causing pain; on the contrary, he described the sensation as pleasant. At his request, I placed my feet on his up to the instep, to be satisfied that he did not stand upon his toes; and at the same time placed my right hand on his body horizontally, partly on his waistcoat and partly on his trousers; the upper part of his body then rose to such an extent that my hand was in a few moments resting on his shirt, with, I should say, about an inch of space between it and the trousers below, and a similar space between it and the vest above. After

Digitized by Microsoft®

remaining for a few moments at the stature of at the least seven feet, Mr. Home sank quietly down to his normal size, and then appeared to be pressed down till less than five feet in height. This remarkable manifestation was repeated three or four times, and we were given to understand that it would have a curative effect.

"On Mr. Home resuming his seat, raps were heard in different parts of the room. The octagon kettle-drum table was again seized by an invisible power, raised straight up into the air and placed inverted upon the head of Mr. Home. It is necessary to name that Mr. Home remained perfectly motionless whilst the table was being held and balanced on his head. Words were again spelt out, significant of the meaning of this droll procedure, such as, '*It is hard to bear, but it is a crown.*' The table was then replaced in the centre of the circle, and again taken suddenly from our midst and thrown down on the floor at about a distance of six feet. We sat quietly for a time, and as I held both my hands down between my knees, I felt something touch my knuckles. I opened my hand and took hold of the leg of the octagon table, which, it now appeared, had been screwed off, and brought to me. Sentences were then spelt out, 'Let it represent the weapon of truth;' 'Truth is strength;' 'We will give you strength where you most need it.' After holding the leg of the table for some time I felt that something had begun to pull it away from me. I resisted for some time, but at length it was dragged from me with a considerable amount of force, and was immediately stuck into Mr. Home's back, sticking up from his collar. While in this condition, messages, somewhat similar to what have been given above, were given by tipping the leg against my hand which I held up to it. It was then worked about Mr. Home's back, and finally slid down it beneath his coat and vanished. I had my hand on the end of it as it was sliding down, but failed in feeling it underneath the coat, though I at once left my seat and

Digitized by Microsoft®

went round to feel for it. On my return to my seat I found this leg of the table laid on it, resting on the seat and the middle bar of the back of the chair. During this process Mr. Home described his sensations as if under the influence of shocks from an electric battery. The octagon table now with its two legs, was replaced by the invisibles, in the centre of the circle. While here, and apparently unsustained by any of us, messages were given, and at length I asked what was to be done with the leg of the table? At the moment the leg rose from its position on my chair beside me, upright in the air, bent towards me and gently touched me on the eye, next bent towards and touched Mrs. Hall, saluted Mr. S. C. Hall in the same manner, and then rapidly darted across the table and down to the floor. We then heard the sound of screwing it into its place, and I put my hand under the table to touch it. This stopped the work, but on my taking away my hand, it was resumed, and when completed, the table was jumped upon this leg as if to show that it had been firmly replaced, raps were heard all over the room, and sounds like the laugh of a child resounded in the air. A large sofa which stood by the wall at about seven feet from us was drawn quietly up so as to touch the chair on which Mr. S. C. Hall was seated. This occurred while we all remained seated. Two large photograph albums were also removed from a shelf behind the sofa.

"After these manifestations, the final and culminating phenomenon was manifested, which in itself constitutes quite an epoch in the history of spiritual phenomena, replete as the records of spiritual manifestations are with what, under ordinary circumstances, would be regarded as impossible. After a short pause, a luminous coronet of star-like light points settled upon the head of Mr. S. C. Hall, and remained stationary, resting on his head for several minutes. Then a semi-luminous appearance was manifested, which assumed the outline of a face with two star-like eyes. Mr. Hall said he felt as if this

Digitized by Microsoft®

form was pressing against him. Mr. Home then rose from his chair, and was walked to and fro complaining of pressure on the head. Suddenly he said he felt a weight on his head. It was then noticed that a crown shaped like a Greek patera, the base fitting on like a skull-cap, had been placed on his head. Tendrils and outlines of leaves were plainly visible, the leaves being vine-shaped, appearing to hang from the edges of the broad patera. Mr. Home appeared greatly agitated, and repeated, 'I am crowned;' 'I am free from pain;' 'I am receiving a new mission;' 'The pain in my head is gone.' He then walked up and down the room, the excitement all but overpowering him. Finally the crown was removed from his head, while sweet-toned notes were distinctly heard proceeding from it; after which it was gently carried towards those present, as though for their inspection, and then removed into the angle of the door, where it remained luminously visible for four or five minutes—visible as though it were from its own intrinsic light. The brilliancy of its star-like form had so deeply impressed all present, that after its disappearance they continued to gaze at the place where the beautiful luminous crown had once stood, unable to realise its disappearance. These notes are necessarily very imperfect; but I have been very careful to set down nothing save what I can most clearly and distinctly depose to."

This *séance* was to myself remarkable, as I had been very ill and weak previous to it, and on that evening was restored to perfect health. It was therefore an instance of direct spirit mesmerism.

Mr. Jencken also gives the following account in "Human Nature," for November, 1867:—

"In this instance the *séance* was held by appointment at Dr. Gully's, Great Malvern. Our object being that of investigation, we limited the number to three, and I must add, used every precaution we could think of, to preclude the possibility of self-deception; we likewise guarded

Digitized by Microsoft®

against any possible preparatory arrangement. Accordingly we changed from the library to the dining-room. We were soon seated at a heavy square table. Twenty minutes passed without any manifestations; then came gentle raps, followed by the table being lifted, tilted, and gently vibrated. Then simultaneously raps were heard in different and opposite parts of the room. At my suggestion the lamp was partly turned down; when a cold current of air was felt to pass over our hands and faces, and a pause ensued. The dining-room table leaf-stand in the corner of the room commenced to vibrate, and one of the leaves being taken from the stand was passed between Mr. Home and the table at which we were seated. It was then raised straight up, and passing vertically over my friend, gently touched him; in passing over me it struck me on the crown of my head, so gently that I could hardly realise it to be the heavy leaf of the dining-room table; the touch nevertheless caused the leaf to vibrate all but sonorously. I name this to prove how delicately-balanced and suspended in the air the leaf of the table must have been to have produced the sonorous vibration. It then passed to the right, touching my shoulder, and finally was placed upon the table at which we were seated. The distance the leaf was carried I compute at nearly twelve yards (allowing for the circuit made) and at an elevation of six feet. A small round table was then moved from the corner of the room, and placed next to my friend, and in reply to his question *who it was*, he received the answer, audible to us all, '*Pa*'—'*Pa dear*'—'*darling Pa.*' An arm chair behind my friend, and at a distance of three yards, was raised up straight into the air, carried over our heads, and placed upon the dining-room table to my left—a voice clearly and loudly repeating the words, 'Papa's chair.' We then observed the wooden box of the accordion being carried from the extreme corner of the room, up to my friend. In passing my right hand, I

Digitized by Microsoft®

passed my hand under and over the box, as it travelled suspended in the air to my front. I did this to make sure of the fact of its being moved by an invisible agency, and not by means of mechanical aid. The box was finally deposited on the table in front of my friend. Mr. Home had in the meantime taken the accordion in his right hand, giving me his left hand. Words were spelt out that the spirits would play his life, from his early infancy to the final drama, 'Daniel in the Lion's Den,' evidently in allusion to his suit with Mrs. Lyon. The accordion immediately commenced playing, and continued so for fifteen minutes. What added to the interest was the accompaniment by voices imitating the clock in the hall, the rush of the waves, and when the 'Lion's Den' was played, loud roars in imitation of lions were heard. I counted three or four voices. The accordion was then taken from Mr. Home, carried about in the room and played. Voices were distinctly heard, a low whispering, and voices imitating the break of a wave on a shore. Finally the accordion placed itself upon the table we were seated at, and two luminous hands were distinctly seen resting on the keys of the instrument. They remained luminously visible for twenty to thirty seconds, melting away. I had in the meantime, and at the request of my friend, taken hold of the accordion; whilst so held by me, an invisible hand laid hold of the instrument and played for two or three minutes what appeared to me to be sacred music. Voices were then heard, a kind of murmuring or low whistling and breathing; at times in imitation of the murmur of the waves of the sea, at other times more plaintively melodious. The accordion was then for a second time taken by an invisible power, carried over our heads, and a small piece of sacred music played—then a hymn—voices in deep sonorous notes singing the hallelujah. I thought I could make out three voices, but my friend said he could speak to four. A jet of light then crossed the room, after which a star or brilliantly luminous

Digitized by Microsoft®

disk, followed by the appearance of a softly luminous column of light, which moved up between me and my friend. I cannot say that I could discern any distinct outline. The luminous column appeared to me to be about five to six feet high, the subdued soft light mounting from it half illumining the room. The column or luminous appearance then passed to my right; and a chair was moved and placed next to me. I distinctly heard the rustling of a silk dress. Instinctively I put my hand forward to ascertain the presence of the guest, when a soft hand seized my hand and wrist. I then felt that the skirt of a dress had covered my knees. I grasped it; it felt like thick silk, and melted away as I firmly clenched my hand on it. By this time I admit I shuddered. A heavy footstep then passed to my right, the floor vibrating to the footfall; the spirit form now walked up to the fireplace clapping its hands as it passed me. I then felt something press against the back of my chair. The weight was so great that as the form leaned on my shoulder I had to lean forward under the pressure. Two hands gently pressed my forehead. I noticed a luminous appearance at my right. I was kissed, and what to me at the time made my very frame thrill again, spoken to in a sweet, low, melodious voice. The words uttered by the spirit were distinctly heard by all present. As the spirit-form passed away, it repeated the words, 'I kissed you, I kissed you,' and I felt three taps on each shoulder, audible to all present, as if though in parting to re-impress me with the reality of its presence. I shuddered again, and in spite of all my heroism, felt very 'uncanny.' My friend now called our attention to his being patted by a soft hand on his head. I heard a kiss, and then the words, 'Papa,' 'Dear Papa.' He said his left hand was being kissed, and that a soft child-like hand was caressing him. A cloud of light appeared to be standing at his left.

"Direct spirit-writing, which has so often been questioned, was also manifested that evening in my presence.

Digitized by Microsoft®

The writing I have preserved, but cannot, for serious reasons, give its contents, startling and unusual as they are. A sheet of paper which had been placed before me at the commencement of the *séance* was rolled up into the shape of a speaking trumpet, the edge having been torn off and placed in a wooden box, which the spirits had placed in front of my friend. Voices, raps, soft breathing, music, were heard, and finally, after the hallelujah had been sung, words were spelt out telling us 'they could do no more.'

"Were it not that I feared I had already trespassed too largely on your valuable space, I would have given my narrative in greater detail, but I know there is a limit to your space. So suffice it to say, that every precaution was taken to prevent mistakes or self-deception. I do not use the word collusion, for from my intimate knowledge of Mr. Home, I unhesitatingly aver his utter incapability of practising deception; but we used more than ordinary precaution—first, because we had met with the express object of thoroughly investigating these interesting phenomena; and also, should occasion need, to be able to answer to any doubt which might be raised. This much for a statement of facts. I use the word facts advisedly. The manifestations I have given a record of have been witnessed by men, all of whom are, strange enough to say, and without exception, literary, scientific, or professional, and who would, if called upon, unhesitatingly testify to the truth of that which they have seen."

The following is from the pen of Mr. H. D. Jencken, and appeared in "Human Nature" for December, 1867:

"I have again to record some interesting facts in connection with the subject of spiritual manifestations, and which have occurred since I last addressed you. The *séances* to which I now allude were held at my house; and I need hardly add that deception, or even self-delusion, are quite out of all question. At the first of the *séances*, and at which, as well as at those subsequently

Digitized by Microsoft®

held, Mr. D. D. Home was present, I had invited a friend of mine to attend, who had to be more than ordinarily satisfied of the truth of the manifestations, owing to his scepticism. The manifestations commenced. Whilst we were seated at the tea table in the dining room, the table was unexpectedly moved, and this was followed by loud, sonorous raps. The fire-screen behind Mr. Home's chair was removed, laid on the floor, and glided towards Mrs. ——. The sceptical guest had in the meantime arrived, and we soon found ourselves seated round a square table in the drawing-room. Raps and tilting of the table soon manifested themselves. Sentences were spelt out—the names of near relatives of one of those present. Mr. Home had now gone off into a trance state. Whilst in this condition, he said he saw a spirit form standing next to a gentleman present. The form, character, and past history were so accurately detailed, that the identity was unmistakably established—much to the surprise of the gentleman, whose departed friend had been quite unknown to Mr. Home. A few sentences were spelt out, and the manifestations thereafter ceased.

"At a subsequent *séance*, the physical demonstrations of spirit power were very marked. On this occasion six in all sat down to a *séance*. Raps, very gentle at first, but gradually increasing in strength, were heard; then the table tilted. After a while the curtains began to be moved, as though by a hand from the window, pushing them into the room. This phenomenon was repeated several times. The semi-grand now showed signs of movement. On three or four occasions this heavy piano was bodily raised quite an inch off the ground, and carried from the wall two to three feet into the room. Raps were then heard in and on the semi-grand. The table next to Mrs. —— (not the one we were seated at) was now gently and elegantly raised, and suspended in the air from eighteen inches to two feet off the ground, as far as I could judge. It remained in this position for one

Digitized by Microsoft®

or two minutes,—time enough to allow one of the party to lie down under the table, and make certain that no mechanical means had been used. This manifestation was repeated three or four times. The accordion was now taken by Mr. Home; and whilst held by him with one hand, a very beautiful hymn was played, and some pieces of sacred music. I noticed distinctly the movement of the keys of the accordion, which, as the instrument was now horizontally suspended in the air, with the finger-board end towards the lights, I was enabled to see. The keys were moved regularly, as though pressed by the fingers of a hand. In answer to a question how many spirits were present, the table tilted twelve times. This was repeated for several minutes, the twelfth tilt being marked by a loud rap or knock. Finally, the sentence was spelt out that they could do no more—that they had no more power: the word 'power' being spelt by movement of the end of the semi-grand.

"SPIRIT-SEEING—SPIRIT VISIONS.

"I have also to record several very characteristic instances of spirit visions of Mr. D. D. Home's. On the occasion I am now narrating the friends present had only casually met, and had seated themselves round the drawing-room table. Suddenly Mr. Home, who had all the while been engaged in conversing with the ladies, changed the expression of his face, rose, and having played a few chords on the piano, returned to resume his seat; but now in a state of trance, his face rigid, hands cold, and the fingers extended. He steadfastly looked across to where Mrs. —— was seated, and said, 'I—— S—— is standing between you and Mr. ——. I see her as she was in life—mark, not as she is, but as she was when on earth.' Mr. Home accurately described the person of the spirit. So marked and clear were the traits he delineated, that no doubt as to identity was possible. He said that a child, which had passed away in early infancy, was stand-

Digitized by Microsoft®

ing next to L—— S——, adding that L—— S—— was much pleased, and anxious to communicate with Mrs. ——, whom she had loved on earth; and, to prove identity, recalled a conversation that had taken place years ago between the two friends. He then said that L—— S—— wished to say that, since passing away, her views had much changed—that she had first to unlearn in order to learn. The spirit then impressed Mr. Home to remind Mrs. —— of a conversation she had recently held with her husband. I may state that Mr. Home was a perfect stranger to the deceased person, whose name he had never even heard. We have here, then, a proof of the presence of spirits of the departed; for we have name, description of person, and marked incidents in past life all given, establishing an identity beyond dispute or cavil.

"Visions of spirit forms I have become tolerably familiar with since I followed the inquiry of spiritual phenomena; and what has added to the deep interest in this subject, is the conviction, confirmed by proof, that the departed again visit us to solace, soothe, warn, as we travel onward to the boundary line of the unknown world. I could render other instances that have come under my notice of spirit visions; but, for this time I will not ask for more space in your columns. Possibly, in my next, I may be able to give you some further account of the extraordinary phenomena we are constantly witnessing. The suit now pending in the Courts of Chancery so completely occupies Mr. Home, that, except at friends' houses, he is rarely to be seen. This suit, one of the most interesting that has for the last century been before the public, is now rapidly coming on for a hearing. The history, incidents, the course of the proceedings, are all of an unusual character; and will form, when on record and allowed to be published, one of the most interesting phases in the history of Spiritualism. That all who have investigated the question of spiritual manifestations look forward to this trial with the utmost interest, I need hardly tell you. We feel that

Digitized by Microsoft®

the day has arrived for vigorously testing the truth of what we know to be the fact, and applying the inexorable logic of actual observation. Testified to in a court of law, I reject the word "belief;" for it is not an acceptance of the existence of the unseen, but the admission of the seen, and heard, and evidence to our external sensibility of an objective fact, that we contend for. No severer test can be applied than that brought in by judicial inquiry, when every statement will have to be proved and substantiated. I repeat that the suit now to be heard will indeed prove of a high order of interest. The mistake the public makes is that of mixing up some crotchet of a belief with the inquiry as inseparable from spiritualism. Now nothing is more erroneous. All that is contended for is, that the fact of certain physical phenomena is true, and that neither deceit nor self-deception have aught to do with it. I had intended to add some few remarks of my own, but space will not allow my doing so this time. When next I address you, and you will grant me space, I will endeavour to render my theory of the cause of some of the phenomena I have been recording, more especially in reference to the vision power of mediums."

The following, which appeared in January, is also by Mr. H. D. Jencken:—

"I have again to address you, and would hesitate, but for the very exceptional circumstances of having Mr. Home staying with me for some weeks, which has given me the amplest opportunity of investigating the truly remarkable phenomena constantly occurring at my house. What adds to the interest of these manifestations is their varied character, not one *séance* resembling another. It is from this fact that I am enabled to single out instances from the many we have witnessed, which present the more marked phases of spiritual manifestations. The *séances* which I here render an account of are given in their order of date. On the first of these evenings eight of us met, two of whom were hard-to-be-convinced sceptics. We had not

Digitized by Microsoft®

been seated many minutes when raps were heard, the table vibrated and tilted, and pieces of furniture at distant parts of the room moved; a pause ensued, followed by the simultaneous movement of two small side tables. One of these held a work-box and a flower-stand; the other a fern plant. The table with the fern plant was raised ten to fifteen inches off the ground, and carried several feet at an inclined plane of thirty degrees to Mrs. ——; and what added to the interest, was the fact of the fern plant remaining firmly fixed on the table during the whole of the time. Whilst thus suspended in the air, the table vibrated, raps were heard in and on the table, and the fern-plant leaves pressed themselves against those whom it was intended to greet in the most affectionate manner, quite overshadowing their faces. One of the sceptic friends had in the meantime lain down on the floor to make sure that no deception was being practised, and had placed her hands under the pedestal of the table whilst it was suspended in the air. Passing Mr. Home, the small side-table crossed over to Mrs. ——, and the bowing, vibrating, and pressing of the fern leaves into her face repeated themselves. Simultaneously, the other small side-table was raised up into the air four to six inches high, and carried up to Mrs. ——. These movements took place under circumstances rendering deception impossible; the room was well lighted, and the tables were moved simultaneously on both sides at some short distance from Mr. Home, and that quite independently of each other, being closely watched by those present. After these manifestations had ceased, the table we were seated at was raised straight up into the air eighteen to twenty-four inches high, and whilst so suspended, answered by an up-and-down movement to any mental questions. The charm of this latter manifestation consists in the elegance of the balance and the softness of movement, the table appearing to be resting on an electric wave. Cold currents of air were passed over our hands and faces. Voices were heard, a low kind of whistling, and breathing. The

Digitized by Microsoft®

accordion was then moved and glided up to Mr. Home. Whilst held by him in one hand, the finger-board end was carried out horizontally into the room, and a short piece of sacred music was played; then the following sentences were spelt out:—

"'We would fain do more to show our love.'

"'The emblems of God's love we bring for you.'

"And, finally, the ordinary message, 'We can do no more,' warned us that our evening had ended.

"A few days later, we were quietly seated round our dining-room table, reading and writing, when raps were heard, first on the side-board, then on the table. As these grew louder and more marked, we paused in our occupations to observe what might occur. The flower-stand behind me moved and vibrated; I heard a snap, as if a leaf or flower had been broken off; the table then moved and trembled. By this time two of our neighbours, whom I had sent for, arrived. Almost as soon as they were seated, raps, trembling of the floor and room occurred, the strong vibratory motion quite unlike any ordinary movement, and of power enough to make the house shake, so that the servants in the upper rooms distinctly felt the tremor. Mr. Home then said he felt a hand touching him, and then his neighbour said she was being touched, and her dress pulled; finally, a flower, one of the fuschia flowers from the stand behind me, was placed in her hand. As you may imagine, we all grouped round to examine the gift, and raps in different parts of the room, and tilting of the table told us who the donors were. Mr. Home had now passed into a trance state. His appearance was singularly strange, and around his head I noticed a luminous halo. Whilst in this condition he recalled scenes of the past life of departed friends so graphically, so touchingly true, that it was hard, indeed, to repress emotional utterance; finally, raising his hands towards heaven, he repeated the words, 'Light, glory—glory be to our Father in heaven.'

"The trance state had now passed away, and Mr.

Digitized by Microsoft®

Home resumed his seat. The accordion which I had placed near him moved and pushed itself up to Mr. Home. He laid hold of it, and a few chords were played. The instrument was then taken from him, carried to the opposite side of the table, and, raising itself about two feet off the ground, not touched by, nor near to any one present, played, resting horizontally in the air, a very sweet-toned piece of music. To me this independent action, unaided by any human hand, was very interesting, and to make certain of the fact, I asked the lady next to me to stoop down and carefully observe the movements of the instrument. The accordion then travelled back to Mr. Home, and a piece of music was played, followed by the melody, 'The last rose of summer." At first only three or four notes were struck, but, on our remarking that the performer could not do more, loud raps were heard, and the whole piece was performed, though not altogether without some imperfections. When this was finished, Mrs. —— was tapped three times on the knee, as if to say, 'I have done it.' The instrument then spelt out 'Good night,' and the *séance* ended.

"On another occasion, Mr. Home had gone off into a slumber on the sofa in my drawing-room. Mrs. ——, who was sitting next to him, suddenly observed a black object glide along the floor towards her. On examination, it proved to be the footstool which had of its own accord moved across the room placing itself at her feet. The oval-shaped drawing-table now moved into the centre of the room, and the arm chair at the farther corner came wheeling up to Mrs. ——, balancing its broad back into her lap. My arrival interrupted these manifestations—the displacement of the furniture only remaining to prove what had occurred.

"At a sitting some few days later on, after the raps, trembling, and lifting of the table which usually prelude a *séance*, several very impressive messages were spelt out —some of these by the raising of the table, at which we

Digitized by Microsoft®

were seated, off the ground, and other sentences were given by the accordion. I will render some few, that you may judge of their character and bearing:—

"'There is but one God, the Father of us all.'

"'God is tolerant: he bears with our shortcomings.'

"'Love and Charity; God gives the one, and expects the other.'

"The latter sentence was particularly pertinent, as we had been speaking, perhaps not unkindly, but reproachfully, of some of our neighbours, whose derision at our assent to the belief of these phenomena had pained us. The accordion had in the meantime placed itself in Mr. Home's hand and played a very fine piece of solemn music. I noticed the keys as they spontaneously moved, the instrument being extended horizontally into the room; it then, extending itself across the table, played in sweet, soft toned notes. This lasted quite three or four minutes.

"A sentence was then spelt out—'You are quite right, it was A—— who touched the keys.'

"Mr. Home's left hand had by this time become luminously white, and to me it appeared to have changed its form, assuming that of a lady's. Whilst thus luminously visible, it wafted the scent from the flowers on the adjoining stand over our faces, and into the room. Flowers were now given to every one of those present; a lady seated near to me had a flower placed under her pocket-handkerchief, and the words were then spelt out:—

"'We have done as we promised; look under the handkerchief.'

"We all expressed our satisfaction at the gifts, thanking our donors, but were reminded by the sentence:—

"'Our thanks are to God, to Him praise is due; Him we must praise.' Following this, came a perfect outburst of very solemn sacred music terminating our evening. One more *séance*, and I shall have finished.

"The remarkable part of this last evening was the

Digitized by Microsoft®

trance state of Mr. D. D. Home, and the elongation of his body, already noticed in previous letters. Whilst in his trance he established the identity of two persons; and in commenting upon the future of a friend, who was about leaving for the seat of war, Mr. Home said—'The spirit who is to guard you is as tall as this.' Then occurred the extraordinary phenomenon of elongation, Mr. Home attaining a height of quite six feet six inches. As I stood next to him, I only reached to his shoulder. His feet were firmly planted on the ground, and my friend placed his hand upon them to make certain that no levitation was taking place. Twice Mr. Home lengthened out to nearly seven feet in height, and the separation of his clothing at the waist showed the extension. Whatever may be the cause of this extraordinary phenomenon, I cannot venture to say; I merely give the fact as I witnessed it, adding that this is the fourth time that this phenomenon has occurred. Mr. Home then mesmerised my friend, and, returning to his seat, awoke from his trance. I have not given you the sublime prayer he uttered whilst in his trance: your space will not allow of this. We now, at Mr. Home's request, went for a few minutes into the drawing-room. Whilst there, spirit lights manifested themselves, like stars or luminous disks of the size of the palm of the hand. The semi-grand was raised, remaining horizontal the whole time, two feet off the ground; and to verify the levitation, I placed my hand under the castors of the piano! Very remarkable was the resting of the leg on my hand for several seconds, and this without causing severe pressure. I fear being considered prolix while detailing how I satisfied myself as to the truth of what was passing, but the unusual character of the phenomena will warrant my repetition of the mode of proof. Spirit voices were heard, and the strings of the piano vibrated not unlike an Æolian harp.

Digitized by Microsoft®

CHAPTER IX.

Elongation and Compression—Handling of Fire.

IN February, 1868, Mr. Jencken says:—

"For brevity's sake, I will avoid repeating attendant circumstances, as well as the minuter description of how those present were placed, and the mode employed to verify the phenomena. Suffice it to say that the phenomena were all carefully examined and tested, not because we doubted Mr. Home, but because the wish to be in a position to affirm positively as to what we were witnessing has become quite a creed with us who have followed this enquiry.

"The first evening of the series of *séances* I am about to narrate commenced after some thirty minutes' pause, with the well-known raps, tremblings, and movement of the table. Then voices were heard to repeat the words 'Holy, holy, holy;' and then was spelt out, 'We will play heavenly music.'

"The accordion, which had in the meantime been taken hold of by Mr. Home, played a very beautiful piece of sacred music; at times the instrument was carried horizontally out into the room, then taken from Mr. Home, suspended in the air, and played. The words, 'This is earthly music' having been spelt out, discords were sounded in rapid succession, followed by breaks of fine harmonics. At one time the accordion was carried under-

Digitized by Microsoft®

neath the table to Mr. ——, and, whilst thus separated from Mr. Home, the instrument played a very soft, sweet-toned piece of music. Mr. Home now rose, and, seating himself at the piano, performed with wonderful execution; then rising from the piano he walked three or four times round our circle, mesmerising each in turn. Here the extraordinary manifestation of elongation and shortening occurred. The height he attained must have been quite six feet nine inches: as he lengthened out, his clothing at the waist separated fully six inches; and again, as he became shorter and shorter, the waistcoat descended quite down to his hips—Mrs. —— holding the end of his waistcoat to make certain of the elongation. The trance state in which Mr. Home had been up to this time now ceased, and we were reminded by a 'Good night' that the evening had ended.

"The next day at dinner, whilst the servants were in the room waiting upon my guests, a chair moved spontaneously from the corner of the room right up to Mr. Home, then another chair, then the dining-room table tilted and moved, and trembled violently. Mr. ——, who was seated next to me, said he was being touched and pulled—at the same time, a hand was observed to lift the table-cloth. I need not assure you how greatly the servants were startled; and even those who were more habituated to these phenomena could not refrain from expressions of surprise. Later in the evening, nine in all had assembled in the drawing-room; raps, movements of the table, the lifting of the semigrand bodily off the ground, and the spontaneous moving of a small side table up to where we were seated, forewarned a very interesting *séance.* Several very beautiful sentences were then spelt out. I will transcribe some few as characteristic. We had been speaking of the late Professor Faraday, and his strong disbelief of these phenomena, when the table tilted, and the following was spelt out:—'He now knows that our God is all-powerful in very truth, and that his ways are not for man to criticise'

Digitized by Microsoft®

"As the word 'God' was spelt out, every letter was given in the most solemn, emphatic manner; each letter was differently spelt—that is, the letter 'G' by the lifting of the table; the letter 'O' by the movement of the semi-grand; 'D,' by loud raps at a distant part of the room. This I have remarked on many occasions; also that the table is generally bodily raised into the air, not tilted, and I have seen instances where the table remained suspended in the air three to four minutes. Then followed the sentence—'Thoughts are a part of the divine; when thoughts are pure, the soul is nearer God.'

"The invisibles then addressed a lady present—'Trust, there is a morning star: it will surely rise.' Another sentence, and I must proceed with my narrative. A lady present had been repeating the following verse, 'And all save the spirit of man is divine.' The invisibles at once responded, 'He too is divine when he forgets himself and follows God.' We were so much pleased at this taking part in our conversation, that we expressed our thanks, and asked if they, the invisibles, really sympathised with us: to which the reply at once came, spelt out by the movement of an adjoining table, to which no one was even near—'Why not? we were as you are—we sought for light; the morning came; the day is everlasting.'

"Mr. Home had by this time passed into a trance. After making several circuits and mesmerising us, he placed himself behind Mrs. ——, whom he mesmerised. I have not space to describe the whole of the proceedings, though I have kept, for my own satisfaction, accurate notes of what passed. Remarkable was the breathing of Mr. Home upon Mrs. ——'s spine, causing alternately a feeling of cold and then of intense heat. Mr. Home said, "I am now going to grow taller;" and then the remarkable phenomenon of elongation was witnessed. The elongation repeated itself three times. The first time Mr. Home lengthened to about 6 ft. 9 in.; and then he shortened down below his normal height to about five feet. He

Digitized by Microsoft®

then asked me to hold his feet, which I did by planting my foot on his instep, whilst Mr. —— held his head, his left hand being placed on his left shoulder. We carefully measured the extent of elongation against the wall; it showed eight inches. Mr. ——, who had been watching the extension at the waist, measured six inches elongation! —Mr. ——, who stood behind Mr. Home, barely reaching up to his shoulders, though himself six feet high. Mr. Home had now seated himself. Again he said, 'I am going to be elongated. Daniel will be elongated thirty times during his life: this is the sixth time" (?) Mrs. ——, who sat next to Mr. Home, placed her hand on his head, and her feet on his feet. Thus held, the elongation nevertheless proceeded, measuring six inches. I repeat, Mr. Home was seated all the time, and held by those present, anxious to verify this truly unaccountable phenomenon. By this time Mr. Home had awakened from his trance. Shadows on the wall were seen, voices heard, and, finally, 'Good night,' spelt out, terminating the evening.

"During the night, the manifestations continued in Mr. Home's bed-room. Mr. ——, who slept in the same room with Mr. Home, said he repeatedly saw spirit forms cross the room. A spirit hand rolled up the blankets of his bed, and a form was felt to walk across his mattress, the pressure of the foot, as it stepped across, quite indenting the bed-clothes.

"More Facts.—At this *séance*, after some considerable lapse of time, three of those present went into the adjoining room. The shutter bell was taken from underneath the sofa, carried across to those present—the spring-band resting for a time on the arm of Mrs. ——, who noticed a clear, brilliant luminosity under the table. The bell first went under Mr. Home's chair and rang, and then raised itself on to his knee, winding the steel-spring round his arm; then it carried itself on to the lap of Mrs. ——, and the spring suspended itself by the curve on her arm

Digitized by Microsoft®

quite firmly, and, disengaging itself, went under the table to Mrs. ——, the luminosity increasing in intensity. Mr. —— had now joined the party. The steel spring had again attached itself to Mr. Home's arms. What added to the interest, was that the end of the steel band answered by taps to the questions put.

"The four friends had now rejoined us. Movements of the table and loud raps at once occurred—Mr. Home falling off into a trance almost immediately. In his trance state, he delivered a very beautiful address, too long to be copied; then passing up to the hearth, placed his hands and then his face in the flames, and on the burning coals. This fire test I have witnessed several times, and particularly call attention to it, as its interest is increased if we but look back to the records of religious persecutions of past ages. On this evening, I had the amplest opportunity of watching the exact movements, and quite satisfied myself of the fact that Mr. Home touched the burning coals. A lady present, unable to resist her expressions of alarm as his face neared and closed upon the flames, was reproved—Mr. Home extending toward her his right hand, which had now become white and luminous, in reproachful warning, saying: 'Have you no faith, no faith? Daniel will take no harm.'

"The accordion was now laid hold of by Mr. Home, who had seated himself at the semigrand; he attempted to play both instruments, but the notes would not tune to accord. He then seated himself at the harmonium, and played a very beautiful piece of sacred music on both instruments—the accordion being carried horizontally into the room whilst held by him with one hand, the harmonium being played by his right hand. What added to the interest, was that both instruments were in perfect accordance—a choir of voices accompanying the instruments, and giving fulness to the performance. Suddenly the music ceased, and the dying voices of the choir appeared to melt away into space. The evening terminated most

Digitized by Microsoft®

pleasantly, the spirits literally taking part in our conversation. I will only instance one or two of the sentences they spelt out in reply to our questions. We had been speaking of Swedenborg's dyspeptic ideas of a future state, and his hell torments, when loud raps made us understand how wrong he had been in his descriptions. Again, we spoke of the demi-obscurity of our churches, and the magic of this sombreness. The sentences were spelt out by loud raps at the extreme end of the room—'The partial obscurity is typical of earth.' 'The soul longs to seek the milder light.' '*God is light; God is love.*' Requesting us to sit on a given evening, our spirit friends departed—the words 'Christmas Eve' being uttered and clearly articulated three or four times."

In the March number of "Human Nature" Mr. Jencken thus describes what he had witnessed:—

"Sir,—According to promise, I now give you an account of the interesting *séances* alluded to in my last letter. These evenings were chiefly occupied by the delivery of some very remarkable addresses, during a trance state—one of which lasted two hours. I can only mention these in barest outline; to give them in full would occupy too much space in your journal. Suffice it, if I select from the several one as a specimen. Mr. Home, who was in a trance the whole of the time, after commenting upon the great difficulty experienced by spiritual beings in communicating with us on earth, continued to say, 'that the spirits were watching their opportunity; that the day would come at which a general outburst of spiritual manifestations would occur; that the most favourable time for such an inroad would be Christmas, as then family circles had gathered home, and the human race become more fit for intercommunication.' Then followed a very learned and philosophical discourse; the address terminating with exhortations and moral teachings.

At the subsequent *séance* a party of us had assembled in the drawing-room, when raps told us that the invisibles were present. We were soon seated round a square table,

Digitized by Microsoft®

when the sentence was spelt out:—'The spirit of healing wishes you to extinguish the lights, and place a bottle of water on the table. In five minutes let Lord Adare have half, and in ten minutes let him have the other half.' I accordingly extinguished the lights, and placed a decanter of water on the table; the bright clear fire on the hearth illumining the room enabled me to watch every movement.

"The decanter of water was now laid hold of by Mr. Home, and whirled about, inverted; no water however flowed from the open mouth of the bottle. A star-like luminous disc was now seen in the bottle, and after a short time the water became aromatic, filling the room with perfume.

"Mr. Home, who had by this time passed into a trance, asked me to bring in another decanter, but empty, and pour off half the water from the full bottle. This I did. He then ordered me to bring in another decanter filled. Seizing hold of the full and half-full decanters, Mr. Home whirled the bottles about, then, inverting them, shook them violently. I again observed the luminous starlike point. Strange enough, though both bottles had no neck-stoppers, yet the water did not flow out; and on replacing the two decanters on the table, one was found to be empty. How emptied I cannot pretend to explain—I merely give the fact. Mr. Home again having laid hold of one of the decanters walked up to the fireplace and deliberately poured some few drops of water upon his finger-points. They literally hissed, and jets of steam arose. I noticed several jets of electric light, not unlike those Reichenbach describes emanating from the fingers of sensitives.

"As some of us present had not closely watched this manifestation, Mr. Home repeated it three times. The perfumes that filled the room, Mr. Home appeared to be able to vary at will. At times a powerful aroma of otto of roses, then a perfume of millefleurs, then that of lavender water was wafted across the room.

"The water in the decanters was now noticed to have become strongly perfumed; and Mr. Home, now ad-

Digitized by Microsoft®

dressing us, said, 'That all the phenomena we were witnessing were not produced by supernatural means; that, for instance, the perfume that filled the room had been abstracted from scents in the house; that they (the spirits) only possessed greater knowledge of chemical agencies, and could eliminate the volatile substances from the fluids which contained them.' And then continuing to address us, said, 'The cures we perform are only effected by our knowledge of the diseases. We do not raise the dead; we merely watch our opportunity to re-awaken life. We do not perform miracles.'

"Mr. Home then continued, 'We have gladly shown you our power over fluids, we will now show you our powers over solids.' He then knelt down before the hearth, and deliberately breaking up a glowing piece of coal in the fire-place, took up a largish lump of incandescent coal, and placing the same in his left hand, proceeded to explain that the caloric had been extracted by a process known to them (the spirits), and that the heat could in part be returned. This he proved by alternately cooling and heating the coal; and, to convince us of the fact, allowed us to handle the coal, which had become cool, then suddenly resumed its heat sufficient to burn one, as I again touched it. I examined Mr. Home's hand, and quite satisfied myself that no artificial means had been employed to protect the skin, which did not even retain the smell of smoke. Mr. Home then reseated himself, and having described how the waters in the decanters were to be used, awoke from his trance quite pale and exhausted.

"I have not detailed the usual accompaniments of a *séance*—raps and vibrations, movements of the furniture —which also occurred during the evening. The semi-grand was lifted massively off the ground; voices were heard; several of us had our hands pressed by spirit-hands; and the lady next to me was moved several feet away from the table, chair and all.

Digitized by Microsoft®

"At a subsequent *séance*, which was held without any preconcertment, those present having only casually met, a lateral upward movement of the semi-grand warned us that the invisibles were in power. We had no sooner seated ourselves, than a gentleman present fell into a trance. This was to me the more interesting, as my friend, a professional man of some note, was quite sceptical, and had only yielded a courteous tolerance to our operations. I examined his arms and hands, which were as rigid as iron. Whilst in this state, he spoke of departed friends, accurately describing them; and conversed with the invisibles. Mr. Home had likewise fallen into a trance; and the conversation of our two clairvoyants, with one another and the invisibles, was truly remarkable. After awakening, my friend complained of pain in his back and limbs, and begged not to be made to join our circle again."

"Human Nature" for April, 1868, has the following from Mr. H. D. Jencken:—"I have again to record spiritual manifestations presenting another phase of the truly remarkable phenomena, and which I have had the opportunity of investigating. On the first evening we met, the tilting of the table, vibrating of the floor, and raps in different parts of the room soon occurred, and a few sentences were spelt out, followed by cold currents of air passing from time to time over our hands and faces. The table we were seated at was raised off the ground twelve or fifteen inches, and the accordion, which Mr. Home had taken into his lap, was laid hold of by an invisible hand, and swung about and over Mr. Home's head, a few chords being played. Mr. Home now took his watch and chain from his pocket, and swung them over his head and to and fro, his arm and hand perfectly cataleptic. The ring of the watch handle appeared to be attracted to his finger ends, and several times we noticed that a short space, about half an inch, intervened between the watch and the finger-points; then, seating himself, the watch was taken from his hand, and carried across

Digitized by Microsoft®

and under the table to each of us in turn, and finally placed in my hand. The lady next to me said she felt a hand press her own, describing the sensation as from a velvet glove. Mr. Home's hands were during the whole time on the table, and cataleptically rigid.

"The trance state, which I have noticed in former letters, now supervened, and Mr. Home, quite unconscious of his movements, walked to and fro, then approached a gentleman present, who, by this time, had also fallen into a trance. The evident struggle of my friend to resist the influence was extremely interesting and satisfactory, as far as the fact of an independent agency was concerned. Both the trance mediums then repeated a most beautiful prayer, in alternate cadence and response. I will select a few lines from the prayer and the concluding sentence, as illustrative of the character of the same:—

"'Blessed are those that forgive; for in them is a gleam of the divine.'

"'How comforting is the presence of the departed!'

"And, in conclusion—

"'We magnify thee, O Lord, for thy deeds; for thy glory is never ending.'

"Mr. Home now took a guitar, and, placing it in the hands of my entranced friend, requested him to play. At first the guitar fell from my friend's hand, whose rigid, cataleptic arms and hands were not yet released from the spiritual mesmeric influence; no sooner had the rigidity passed, than he played two very sweet, full-toned pieces of music, representing, as Mr. Home told us, 'doubt and hope.' Both the gentlemen now awoke—my friend somewhat bewildered, and perfectly unconscious of what had passed. The table now moved and tilted, and finally turned upside down. My friend's right arm was then influenced, and made to seize hold of the leg of the table, and aid in setting it up again. This manifestation so far interested me as proving the presence of a power capable of acting upon a person whilst in his waking state, and

Digitized by Microsoft®

controlling his corporeal action. Greetings and kind touches from spirit-hands terminated the evening.

"The manifestations I have next to give an account of are of a very interesting character, as they occurred at the passing away of an old and faithful attendant of our household. On the morning of the patient's decease, who had been suffering from phthisis, the nurse in attendance was startled by a chant of sweet, solemn music passing through the room which the patient occupied. Raps were heard over and near the bed; and, at the request of the sufferer, Mr. Home, who was sleeping in an upper room, was sent for. On his entering the sick-room, the music again, in mournful cadences, swept through the air—in all, the music lasted thirty minutes. Spiritual raps on the bed, over head, all round the dying woman, spoke in unmistakable language of the presence of kind attendant spiritual beings. At two o'clock in the afternoon the soul left the body. We, who had witnessed the last moments of a kind friend, sat silent and sorrowful in my dining-room, when, to our surprise, spiritual manifestations came, in raps, gentle movements of the furniture, and soft, kind touches, all warning us that friends do not leave us, though death may sever for awhile by changing our physical condition. I cannot describe how the presence of spiritual beings, so manifested as was their communion, cheered and solaced us.

"A few hours later in the day, we entered the bed-room, and, to our surprise, found the room perfumed. The perfume appeared to enter through the open window. I cannot describe it otherwise than like the finest incense, or the scent of dried flowers, such as violets. The perfume passed through the house, not in a steadily-conducted current, but, as it were, capriciously, in limited bounds, as though restricted to the movements of an electric undulation. Fortunately, a friend called in upon us in the course of the evening, and being experienced, from his scientific pursuits, in investigating physical facts,

Digitized by Microsoft®

I asked him to examine this extraordinary phenomenon with care. This he did, and fully established the following facts:—

"1st. That the perfume did not arise from any substance in the room, but appeared to be carried in from the outer atmosphere.

"2ndly. That the perfume was restricted to some unknown but independent current, for, contrary to all laws of diffusion of scents, the strong draught of an open door and window did not carry the perfume into the landing, six inches of space absolutely intercepting the aroma.

"3rdly. Contrary to known laws, the aroma descended to the rooms below, and even entered the drawing-room of my neighbour's house.

"4thly. The room felt dry, magnetic, warm. The following day, the medical gentleman who had attended the patient noticed this phenomenon of the wonderfully sweet perfume pervading the room, remarking that it made the impression upon him of something 'holy.'

"But I must revert to the manifestations on the day the patient passed away. During the whole of the afternoon, Mr. Home had been passing from one trance into another. In one of these states he proceeded to the room of the deceased. Returning with her Bible, he opened it at the 12th chapter of 1st Corinthians, and pointed to verses 1 and 10. The language of the Bible being in Esthonian, made the selection of this passage so far more remarkable, as Mr. Home does not understand a word of this little-known language—even admitting he could have read with his eyeballs turned up, and the lids drawn spasmodically down and closed. As I tried to understand which verses were intended, gentle raps at the far end of the room guided me.

"In the evening, Mr. Home again fell into a trance, and then stated 'that M——— had lived a pure life, and that her body had been purified by spiritual agency; and the miracle known to have occurred with some of the

Digitized by Microsoft®

saints of the Catholic church had been repeated this day, not as a miracle, but in proof of the power of spiritual influence and presence.' Impressive beyond language was the manifestation of gentle, sonorous raps on every side as we stood grouped around the departed, wondering why this strange phenomenon of holy perfume should be allowed—the spiritual beings appearing to converse with us by the agency of the simple telegraphy of raps, answering to our prayerful questions in quick response, 'Yes, yes, yes, we are present.'

"Two evenings later, Mr. Home was seated quietly at the fireside, when raps came close to me, and a sentence was spelt out, that we, three of us, should proceed to the room where the body had now been laid out, but not to enter, only stand at the door. This we did, and, on opening the door, a strong current of perfume passed over us, this time filling the landing, and hall, and house. The phenomenon of perfume entering my house, continued to the day of the funeral—at times being, despite of open windows, quite overpowering. Manifestations of spiritual presence during the whole of the time were constantly occurring, and, even in my bedroom, I was awakened by trembling of the floor, and raps against the wall and bed; and a friend who was staying with me said he had mental questions answered by raps at the foot of his bed, which moved and vibrated."

Mr. Jencken in "Human Nature," May, 1868, gives the following account:—"We had, as usual, seated ourselves round a table in the drawing-room, and after the lapse of a considerable time, the trembling of the floor, movement of the table, and vibration of the semi-grand commenced. Mr. Simpson, whose scientific training had given him the aptitude for experiment, suggested the placing of a large flat music-book on rollers on the table, and then for us to rest our fingers on the edge of the book; the object being to check any involuntary movements. Much to my satisfaction, the table moved more violently

Digitized by Microsoft®

than before, and Mr. Simpson, who had lain down on the floor to observe the movement of the table more closely, quite satisfied himself of the independent motion. We next suggested trying the alternating weight and lightness of the table, a manifestation occasionally produced. Mr. Simpson re-examined the table to satisfy himself that no disturbing cause could interfere; this done, we made the request to have the table 'heavy.' On attempting to raise it, we could not possibly manage to lift it. Then we requested that the table should be made 'light,' and the table only just before heavy and immovable could now be raised upon the slightest effort. Mr. Simpson, satisfied with this test, suggested repeating the experiment with the music-book, which had been placed on rollers on the table. I at first quite doubted the result, but on trying to raise the edge of the book it felt as if cleaved to the table, and then on changing to, 'Let it be light,' the book became as light as a feather. Again and again we repeated the experiment, and finally satisfied ourselves of the reality of the important fact of an independent agency, guided by intelligence, and of the presence of an invisible being, possessing the power of reading our thoughts, and of producing at will the phenomenon of alternately making the book heavy or light. You will think me tedious for dwelling at such length upon so comparatively insignificant a phenomenon, but the very simplicity of the manifestation gives interest. The phenomenon was, so to speak, quite within grasp; and I like, above all things, to have a manageable fact before me. The law is the same; the raising of a single pound weight, or of a ton, does not affect the principle: and here I had all I could desire,—a strong clear light; our own home for our theatre of operation; our own friends with us; a scientific man at my elbow, ready to catch at a shadow of a doubt, and whom we allowed to arrange at will, and place himself in any position he chose; and Mr. Home, the medium—good-tempered in the extreme—actuated only by a sincere

Digitized by Microsoft®

desire to aid the investigation: all gave additional interest to our evening. I am now in a position safely to assert that I have proved, beyond a doubt, by this simple experiment, the operation of an unseen power, guided by intelligence.

"Later in the evening, the accordion, which had been placed on the table, spontaneously moved six to eight inches from one side of the table towards the other—not a hand, not a finger touching it. The semi-grand was raised off the ground, and moved a foot from the wall into the room, no one touching the piano at the time. An adjoining oval walnut-wood table trembled, raised itself first on one leg, then on the other, and glided up to our table. Mr. ——, at my request, placed himself on the floor, to watch the movement, and, after a rigorous examination, satisfied himself that the motions were produced by an unseen, independent agency.

"We had now reseated ourselves, when we noticed the curtains being pushed into the room; first, the curtains behind Mr. Home, then those of the farther window. They were then drawn aside, and I noticed a hand—for a moment only—between the curtain and the table. As if to give us a final proof of independent action, the water decanter and wine decanter on the tray with refreshments, which we had placed on the adjoining table, moved, tilted, the water bottle placing itself at the edge of the tray. Of course my friend was on the alert, re-examined curtain, table, and tray, and pronounced the coast clear of magnets or other appliances.

"Another test: I am certain you will bear with me. It is so satisfactory to have done our utmost to convince ourselves, we quite long to communicate the result of our inquiry to others. Raps having been heard under the leaf of the table we were seated at, it was suggested to pin a sheet of paper underneath the table, which would effectually intercept the action of any instrument—such as the point of a stick or finger point—that might be

Digitized by Microsoft®

used to produce the sound. The sheet of paper, after some slight difficulty, was pinned on, and then we waited for the result. After a pause, raps came, again and again; some appeared to vibrate against the table, and inside of the paper, others sounded sonorous and clear. The fact was established, that the placing of the paper did not interfere with the raps. But enough of physical tests; now as to identity.

"Mr. Home had laid hold of the accordion in one hand, and after waiting a few minutes, some chords were played by an invisible hand, followed by an air, which was repeated three or four times. I cannot say I quite followed the tune; it appeared to me broken, and changed from its original melody. 'What does it mean?' was asked. The name 'John' was spelt out, and the tune repeated. Again we asked, 'To whom does this apply?' No answer; and so the matter was passed over. A few days afterwards, I received a letter from a gentleman who had been present, explaining that the air that had been played was meant for him; that at the time, anxious not to disturb the mind of the medium, and to shut the door even upon thought-reading, he had kept his counsel; that the tune played was one he had himself altered, to suit his voice; that only two persons alive knew the notes he had changed, the third who knew it was beyond the grave. He writes—'It is an air my wife particularly liked, and always asked me, if alone with her, to play. The words are by Mrs. Hemans, and the two last lines are—

> "'Yet would I buy with life again
> That one dear dream of thee.'

My friend continues to say—'These are simple facts; I give them as such.' The accordion, as it played the air or melody, moved horizontally towards Mr. Simpson, who narrowly kept observing it all the time, and to his praise, be it said, remained calm and watchful throughout, anxious only for the truth. Next to actual speech, to the

Digitized by Microsoft®

actual visible presence of a spirit form, this test of identity appears to me most satisfactory and conclusive.

"The other instance of identity is of a totally different character. Mr. Home had spontaneously, whilst seated at the fire-side in my drawing-room, passed into a trance state. We were alone, only Mrs. ——— being present. I noticed the clairvoyant-expression of face which characterises the trance medium. After a pause, Mr. Home addressed us, and gave an account of the passing away of one we all had known in life. He said the spirits embalmed the body of Miss A—, and the perfume that filled the room after her passing away was created by them. Then suddenly changing his discourse, he said, 'Who is Louisa? she loves your son, cared for him like a mother;' and then accurately described the person and peculiarities of character of a kind friend who had passed away from earth many years ago. What added to the interest was, that none present had even in thought named the person alluded to, so that thought-reading was not possible. I carefully watched Home's movements; he evidently appeared to be seeing an object, and the remarks he made were spoken as if prompted by an external agency.

"I admit the great difficulty presented by visions, their subjective character rendering proof, if not impossible, at all events very difficult; and the only mode of ascertaining the truth is to compare the accounts of visions of trance mediums with one another, group the experiences together, and then to generalize.

"At a subsequent *séance*, Mr. Home fell into the trance state almost as soon as the circle had been arranged; then blindfolding himself, he drew an alphabet, and having finished this, commenced spelling out sentences. The first spelt out was—'I am not convinced even now, but can see that I have much to learn.—DAVID BREWSTER.'

"Sentences followed explanatory of his passing away; then—'The earthly and spiritual are two distinct exis-

Digitized by Microsoft®

tences. It is not to be inferred because we say we were present, that we took cognizance of his earthly surroundings. We are in no way connected. We have our share of curiosity, and we desire to know many things which are forbidden. We know, for instance, that 'Speke' is not in spirit life; Doctor S., his brother, knows it; the traveller knows it.' Then followed the words, 'At lunch—Gibson.'

"I had not intended to publish these communications, but for the extreme interest the public have taken in Rev. Mr. Speke's strange freak of hiding himself. The *séance* took place nine days before the news of his discovery was made known, and this fact may add interest to my account of the spirit communications I have recorded. I render this strictly as it occurred, without even hazarding a comment."



Digitized by Microsoft®

Between JANE LYON . . . . *Plaintiff*

and

DANIEL DUNGLASS HOME
and WILLIAM MARTIN
WILKINSON . . . . *Defendants.*

AFFIDAVIT FILED ON THE PART OF THE PLAINTIFF, BY MESSRS. DRUCE SONS & JACKSON OF 10 BILLITER SQUARE HER SOLICITORS.

Filed 27th June 1867.

I JANE LYON of No 17a Albert Terrace Albert Gate Hyde Park in the county of Middlesex widow the above-named Plaintiff make oath and say as follows:

1. Referring to the third paragraph of the bill filed by me in this cause I say that I sought and obtained an interview with the above-named Defendant Daniel Dunglass Home as therein stated under the following circumstances My late husband Charles Lyon Esquire of Wooth Grange Bridport Dorset died in the month of August 1859 and he told me shortly before his death that he believed that a change would take place in seven years after his death and that we should meet and I had in consequence an impression that I should not survive him for a longer period than seven years In or about the month of July in last year I called upon Mrs. Sims a photographer in Westbourne Grove to have a photograph taken of a portrait of my husband and saw her several times upon the subject of such photograph and in course of conversation with her I mentioned the above circumstance in connection with my husband's death and the impression which I

Digitized by Microsoft®

had formed in consequence and she told me that it was not necessary that I should *die* in order to meet my husband again but that if I were to become a "Spiritualist" *he* would come *to me* I had never before heard of Spiritualism Mrs. Sims afterwards lent me several books upon the subject which I read and after some little time she told me that the head Spiritualist Mr Home (being in fact the said Defendant Daniel Dunglass Home) had opened an "Athenæum" at 22 Sloane Street Hyde Park and she suggested that I should write to him to send me a prospectus and particulars of it as I wished after what she had told me to become a subscriber Accordingly on the 30th of September last I wrote to the said Defendant that I was anxious to become a subscriber and asking for a prospectus and particulars and inquiring when and to whom the money was to be paid Not having received any reply from the said Defendant I called on the 3rd October last at No. 22 Sloane Street aforesaid and asked to see him and I was shown upstairs to the first floor where I was received by him in the room which he calls the "Athenæum" I had never before seen the said Defendant nor had I ever even heard of him until his name was mentioned to me by Mrs. Sims as aforesaid and he is not related to or connected with me or my family or the family of my late husband by birth marriage or otherwise nor did my said late husband in his lifetime know the said Defendant or to the best of my knowledge information and belief ever hear of him.

2. The said Defendant (who was alone) then entered into conversation with me respecting the Athenæum and my aforesaid letter to him and my wish to become a subscriber and the terms of subscription and he then asked me to go with him to see the rooms upstairs where as I afterwards found he lived I went with him accordingly into his sitting room (on the second floor) in which was a table with writing materials and an accordion upon it No one besides the said Defendant and myself was present We sat down at the table and raps came to the

Digitized by Microsoft®

table almost immediately The said Defendant then said "That is a call for the alphabet" or words to that effect I was not at that time aware of the mode in which the so-called "spiritual séances" are conducted but I have from subsequent experience learnt that the presence of a so-called "medium" is considered necessary in order to evoke what are believed to be the spirits of the deceased and that the supposed spirits on being summoned signify their presence by rapping and on questions being put respond to them either by three raps (for the affirmative) two (for doubtful) one (for the negative) or by five raps which are supposed to signify that the alphabet is required In the latter case the letters of the alphabet are either repeated by the medium or some one else present or a printed or written alphabet is produced and the letters are pointed at by the medium or some one else present and on the letter desired to be indicated by the supposed spirit being repeated or pointed at raps are or a rap is given to signify that such is the letter intended and so on until a complete word or sentence as the case may be is spelt out On the occasion of my first interview with the said Defendant as aforesaid no printed or written alphabet was used but he repeated the letters of the alphabet from time to time a rap being given as he arrived each time at the letter intended to be indicated In this way the supposed spirit on that occasion spelt out "My own beloved Jane I am Charles your own beloved husband I live to bless you my own precious darling I am with you always I *love love love* you as I alway did" or words to that effect and as nearly as I can remember those very words I was induced by the said Defendant to believe and I really believed at the time that the spirit of my late husband was in reality speaking to me to the effect hereinbefore mentioned Nothing further material to this suit passed on that occasion and the supposed spirit spelt out in the same manner as before "I have no further power at present to speak but I will not leave you my own darling" or words to that effect and as nearly as I

Digitized by Microsoft®

can remember those very words I was very much gratified at what I then believed to be a real manifestation of the spirit of my husband to me and not having my cheque book then with me I asked the said Defendant to call upon me at No 18 Westbourne Place Hyde Park where I was then living in apartments and told him I would give him a cheque for £10 for my subscription to the Athenæum.

3. On the following day vizt. the 4th October last the said Defendant called upon me at No. 18 Westbourne Place aforesaid where I received him alone in my sitting-room and almost immediately raps came indicative as he induced me to believe and as I in fact believed of the presence of my husband's spirit and the following words were as nearly as I can remember then spelt out in the manner before referred to the said Defendant repeating as before the alphabetical letters "My own beloved Jane—I am your own Charles and I am indeed constantly with you I am so happy to be with you I *love love love* you Be very calm I will touch you." I was then repeatedly touched as I believed by the spirit of my late husband and the said Defendant was at that time seated close to me at the table I then being much gratified drew out and gave to the said Defendant a cheque on my bankers for £30 (instead of £10 as promised) as my subscription to the Athenæum At this time I became much impressed with what I believed to be the power of the said Defendant to evoke the spirit of my husband and he soon acquired a great ascendancy over my mind.

4. On or about the 6th of October last the said Defendant again called upon me in Westbourne Place aforesaid and I again received him alone in my sitting-room and he commenced talking to me on the subject of his marriage with his deceased wife and told me how happy he had been with her and he stated his intention of marrying again but said that he should not marry a young lady as he did not like young ladies but was anxious to

Digitized by Microsoft®

marry an elderly lady and that he should make a very loving and affectionate husband and from those remarks and others which followed on the same subject I then inferred and now verily believe that he intended to make to me proposals of marriage but I told him that the subject was distasteful to me and I silenced him upon it at once Almost immediately afterwards raps came again indicating as the said Defendant induced me to believe and as I in fact believed the presence of my husband's spirit and the following word or words as nearly as possible to the following effect were (with other words) then spelt out in the manner before referred to (the said Defendant repeating rapidly the letters of the alphabet and stopping from time to time as raps came indicating the letters to be used) "My own darling Jane— * * * * * I love Daniel" (meaning as I understood the said Defendant) "he is to be our son he is my son therefore yours Do you remember before I passed I said a change would take place in seven years? That change has taken place" The table was then thrown up from the floor and the words "I am happy happy happy" were spelt out in the same manner as before I then said to the supposed spirit "Do you remember I said at the time to you 'Shall we then meet?'" and the answer spelt out in the same manner as before was in the following words or to the following effect—"In a little time I will make myself visible to you" and the supposed spirit continued Do not my own darling say the light of other days is gone the light is with you Charles lives your own Charles lives and loves you and is near you constantly my own darling Jane I will have power to come to you entirely I will be so happy and so will you my wife beloved of God Now beloved I will speak to you as often as I can I will come for your health and Daniel's" It was also spelt out in manner aforesaid that he the supposed spirit of my husband wished to make Daniel (meaning as I understood the said Defendant) independent as he was to be

Digitized by Microsoft®

our son and that he the supposed spirit would speak of the manner in which it was to be done another time I then drew out a cheque on my bankers for £50 and gave it to the said Defendant as he was to be (as I then believed according to the directions of the spirit of my husband) our son that he might not be without the means of living.

5. Referring to the three last paragraphs hereof I say that the sentences spelt out as aforesaid were written down by me from memory shortly after the happening of the events hereinbefore mentioned in a book now in my possession from which they are respectively hereinbefore quoted and I say positively that whether the words so quoted were the exact words spelt out as aforesaid or not words to the same effect as those so quoted were spelt out as aforesaid.

6. The said Defendant then commenced paying repeated visits to me and on or about the 8th day of October last and certainly either on that day or the day next preceding or the day next following such 8th day of October he called upon me in Westbourne Place aforesaid and on that occasion also raps came indicating (as I was induced by the said Defendant to believe and did believe) the presence of the spirit of my said late husband and it was spelt out in manner before mentioned (the said Defendant repeating the alphabetical letters as before) It was then spelt out in the manner before mentioned and as I was induced to believe and did believe by the spirit of my late husband that the said Defendant was to be our adopted son and that I was to make over to him a sufficient sum from my funded property to bring him in £700 a year.

7. On several of the occasions referred to in this my affidavit when sentences were being spelt out as I was induced by the said Defendant to believe and did believe by the spirit of my late husband I remonstrated with the said Defendant telling him while he was hurriedly repeating the letters of the alphabet that he was "going too

Digitized by Microsoft®

fast" and he frequently answered that it was not so as he well knew beforehand what was coming.

8. On or about the 10th October last and certainly within a day or two after the meeting referred to in the 6th paragraph hereof the said Defendant Daniel Dunglass Home called upon me in Westbourne Place aforesaid and took me to the City in a cab to carry out the aforesaid transaction as to the £24,000 While we were on the road constant raps were heard in and about the cab which the Defendant told me showed that the spirits approved of what I was about to do We drove straight to the office of Messrs. Fox Taylor & Company stockbrokers employed by the said Defendant and of whom I knew nothing the said Defendant having previously told me that the transaction must not be effected through the brokers employed by my bankers Messrs. Williams Deacon & Co. as I had wished I then went to the Bank of England with the said Defendant and one of the said firm of Fox Taylor & Co. (at whose request I was identified by one of the clerks employed by Messrs. Williams Deacon & Co.) and signed a book at the said Bank of England transferring as I understood a sufficient amount of stock to represent in value £24,000 sterling but whether to the said Defendant or to a purchaser I did not know and no account receipt or other paper in connection with the transaction was given to me on that occasion or subsequently but to the best of my knowledge information and belief such stock was sold and the proceeds thereof were paid to the said Defendant Daniel Dunglass Home I was then allowed by the said Defendant to return to Westbourne Place by myself and he went either on that or on or about the following day to Brighton and thence to Malvern where he remained as I believe some few weeks and where I sent to him in accordance with his request on or about the 28th day of October last a cheque for £30 for his own use I also on other occasions paid other small sums to him or on his account by his request The said Defendant on or about

Digitized by Microsoft®

the 5th day of November 1866 as appears by a stock receipt (left by him accidentally as I believe in my possession) invested £23,913 17*s.* 3*d.* cash being as I verily believe part of the aforesaid sum of £24,000 so acquired by him as aforesaid in the purchase in his own name of the sum of £26,756 15*s.* 5*d.* Consolidated Bank Annuities.

9. In or about the beginning of November last the said Defendant again called upon me in Westbourne Place aforesaid when I was alone and he then became as he induced me to believe and as I did believe entranced and represented in trance the spirit of my said late husband which he induced me to believe then spoke through him the said Defendant and told me to lay some sheets of note paper on the table with pens and ink and I was to write what he was about to dictate He then dictated to me word for word instructions for a will giving all my property to him absolutely and directing him to take the name and arms of Lyon and at his dictation I addressed an envelope to the Defendant William Martin Wilkinson (who was as I afterwards found out the intimate friend and solicitor of the said Defendant Daniel Dunglass Home but of whom I then knew nothing) and inclosed the said instructions therein with a note to the said Defendant William Martin Wilkinson which I also wrote at the dictation of the said Defendant Daniel Dunglass Home requesting the said William Martin Wilkinson to prepare a Will for me in accordance with the aforesaid instructions and bring it for signature on a certain evening therein appointed I also wrote at the dictation of the said Defendant Daniel Dunglass Home letters to Dr. Hawksley and Mr. Rudall (who as I afterwards found out were also intimate friends of the said last-named Defendant but of whom I knew nothing) requesting them to call without fail at No. 18 Westbourne Place aforesaid on the evening appointed as aforesaid On the evening so appointed which was to the best of my belief the 12th of November last the said last-named Defendant and also the said Dr. Hawksley and Mr. Rudall came as arranged and

Digitized by Microsoft®

the said Defendant William Martin Wilkinson also came bringing with him the will prepared by him in accordance with the aforesaid instructions in duplicate The said Defendant Daniel Dunglass Home then left me alone with the said Defendant William Martin Wilkinson the said Dr. Hawksley and the said Mr. Rudall and the said William Martin Wilkinson then read over the will to me and questioned me as to whether I had fully considered the terms of the will and understood its effect to which I replied that I had fully considered the matter and understood the effect of the will and was ready to sign it I then signed it in duplicate in the presence of all the said three persons each of whom attested it and the said Defendant William Martin Wilkinson then took away the original and duplicate one of which I have since obtained from him being the paper writing marked "A" produced and shown to me at the time of swearing this my affidavit but my signature at the foot thereof has since been obliterated by me and the note at the foot referring to revocation has been since added by me Before the said will so prepared as aforesaid was brought by the said William Martin Wilkinson as aforesaid the said Defendant Daniel Dunglass Home informed me that as a matter of form he the said William Martin Wilkinson would question me as aforesaid as evidence of his having done so might be called for hereafter in case the will should be disputed and the matter should come into court after my death and that therefore every means must be taken to show that I was making the will of my own free will and not under the dictation of the spirit of my husband and that all letters from the said Defendant William Martin Wilkinson to me would be written cautiously in the same view so that I was quite prepared for the questions put to me by him I however signed the said will under the full conviction and belief that it was dictated by the spirit of my late husband and that I was in signing it complying with his wishes.

10. Very shortly after and to the best of my recollection on the day after I had signed the said will as afore-

Digitized by Microsoft®

said the said Defendant Daniel Dunglass Home *alias* Daniel Home Lyon again called on me and when we were alone together became as he induced me to believe and as I did believe entranced and represented in trance the spirit of my said late husband which he induced me to believe then spoke to me through him the said Defendant and told me to bring out my will (made previously to that signed on or about the 12th day of November last as hereinbefore appears) in duplicate and burn it which I accordingly did in the belief that in doing so I was complying with the wishes of my said late husband On a subsequent occasion when the said Defendant called upon me (though I am unable to recollect the date of his visit) he told me that my late husband's spirit had told him that all communications from him the said supposed spirit on the subject of business transactions between the said Defendant and myself were to be burnt and he the said Defendant thereupon looked out and placed on the table all papers of that description in my possession and burnt them.

11. In or shortly prior to the month of December last at another interview which I had at my rooms with the said Defendant Daniel Dunglass Home alone I was induced by him to believe and I did believe that the spirit of my said late husband was again present and was speaking to me by raps as aforesaid and it was then spelt out by the supposed spirit in the manner hereinbefore referred to that I was to give to the said Defendant as a present for his birthday a sum of £6,000 more to make up with the aforesaid sum of £24,000 the aggregate sum of £30,000 Accordingly I went on or about the 10th day of December 1866 (in the full conviction and belief that I was obeying the orders of my said late husband) with the said Defendant alone to the Bank of England and transferred into his name as Daniel Dunglass Home the sum of £6,798. 17*s.* 4*d.* Consolidated Bank Annuities belonging to me such sum being then equivalent in value to the sum of £6,000 sterling or thereabouts The said Messrs.

Digitized by Microsoft®

Fox Taylor & Co. were the brokers employed on that occasion and the instructions for such transfer were as I verily believe given to them by the said Defendant.

12. Referring to the eleventh paragraph of the bill filed by me in this cause I say that since filing my affidavit in this cause on the 15th day of June instant my attention has been more particularly drawn to the date of the deed poll referred to in such eleventh paragraph and that to the best of my recollection such deed was not nor was any deed relating to the subject matter of this suit executed by me on the said 12th day of December or at any time other than the occasion upon which I executed the deeds in connection with the security for £30,000 in the said bill mentioned as hereinafter more particularly referred to but I believe that on such last-mentioned occasion a deed of or to the purport or effect mentioned in such eleventh paragraph was executed by me with the other deeds then executed by me as hereinafter appears while my mind was under the influence and control gained over it by the said Defendant in manner aforesaid and I say that the said last-mentioned deed poll was to the best of my belief prepared by the said Defendant William Martin Wilkinson under instructions given to him by his said co-Defendant and not under any instructions given by me or by my order and without the intervention of any solicitor or independent person on my behalf.

13. At the interview referred to in the eleventh paragraph of this my affidavit or at another interview held by me with the said Defendant Daniel Dunglass Home just about that time and when I was alone with the said Defendant and when he had induced me to believe that the spirit of my said late husband was again present and speaking to me it was spelt out in manner aforesaid by the said supposed spirit that the said Defendant William Martin Wilkinson was to procure a mortgage for £30,000 to be advanced out of my money which mortgage was to be taken in the name of the said Defendant Daniel Dun-

Digitized by Microsoft®

glass Home and I was to have the interest for my life and the principal was to go to the said Defendant at my death The mortgage for £30,000 referred to in the indenture of 19th January 1867 mentioned in the thirteenth paragraph of the said bill was accordingly obtained by or through the said Defendant William Martin Wilkinson with my sanction in the belief and conviction on my part that in giving such sanction I was fulfilling the wishes of my said late husband's spirit but I ultimately refused to consent to the mortgage being taken in the name of the said Defendant Daniel Dunglass Home and suggested that the arrangement eventually carried into effect by the said indenture of the 19th day of January 1867 should be made The said last-mentioned indenture and also the indenture of transfer of even date therein recited were accordingly prepared by the said Defendant William Martin Wilkinson and both deeds and as I believe the said deed poll of the 12th day of December 1866 were on or about the same 19th day of January 1867 brought to me from his office by his son and a clerk (Mr. Hartley by name) for signature The deeds were read over to me and the said Daniel Dunglass Home was then present and sitting close to me at the time and he kept touching me and persuading me to sign and I accordingly then signed the said indentures of the 19th day of January 1867 and as I believe the said deed poll of the 12th day of December 1866 while my mind was under the control gained over it by the said last-named Defendant by the means aforesaid and without the intervention of any independent solicitor or other person on my behalf And I say that the suggestion hereinbefore referred to as to the arrangement for carrying out which the said indentures of the 19th day of January 1867 were prepared was made by me while under such control and influence as aforesaid.

14. Another mortgage for £30,000 was afterwards obtained for me by the said Defendant William Martin Wilkinson at my request and on or about the 13th day of

Digitized by Microsoft®

February last I sold out for the purposes of such mortgage a sum of stock which produced to the best of my information and belief £26,596. 13*s.* 8*d.* net cash leaving a deficiency of £3,403. 6*s.* 4*d.* to make up the principal to be advanced and the said last-mentioned sum was at the request of the said Defendant William Martin Wilkinson provided by the said Defendant Daniel Dunglass Home by sale of part of the stock which he had acquired in manner hereinbefore appearing.

15. The said Defendant William Martin Wilkinson at that time or shortly afterwards told me that I had still a sum of £2,290 9*s.* 5*d.* Consolidated Bank Annuities standing in my name of which I was not aware and it occurred to me that I should towards replacement of the stock so sold out by his said co-Defendant as last aforesaid transfer to him the said Defendant Daniel Dunglass Home the said remaining stock so standing in my name and I accordingly on or about the 21st day of February last transferred such last-mentioned sum into the name of the said Defendant Daniel Dunglass Home and I say that the last-mentioned transfer was made by me while I was still under the control and influence acquired over my mind by the said last-named Defendant by the means aforesaid.

16. On or about the 13th day of March 1867 (as appears by an account of the sale rendered to the said Defendant Daniel Dunglass Home by the said Messrs. Fox Taylor & Co. which is in my possession it having been accidentally left with me by the said Defendant he the said Defendant sold out the sum of £21,947 17*s.* 6*d.* Consolidated Bank Annuities part as I verily believe of the aggregate sum of like annuities so acquired by him as hereinbefore appears and the net proceeds of such sale amounting to the sum of £20,000 sterling were as I have been informed by the said Defendant and as I verily believe lent and advanced by him through the said Defendant William Martin Wilkinson as mentioned in the sixteenth paragraph of the said bill and the securities for

Digitized by Microsoft®

the same sum of Twenty thousand pounds have as I am informed by my solicitors and believe been deposited together with the securities for the firstly hereinbefore mentioned principal sum of Thirty thousand pounds with the Clerk of Records and Writs in pursuance of the order made in this cause on the 18th day of June instant.

17. Having regard to the sales of stock hereinbefore mentioned to have been made by the said Defendant Daniel Dunglass Home I say that to the best of my belief there is a sum of £3 per Cent. Consolidated Bank Annuities exceeding £9,000 (Stock) still standing in the name of the said Defendant in the books of the Governor and Company of the Bank of England and a distringas has been placed by my solicitors on my behalf upon the sum of £9,000 like annuities part of the larger sum of like annuities so standing as I believe in his name as aforesaid.

18. I have lately upon reflection become convinced that I have in the several transactions matters and things hereinbefore referred to been altogether imposed upon by and made the dupe of the said Defendant Daniel Dunglass Home and that the several directions which at the time I believed to have been given as aforesaid by the spirit of my said late husband were not in reality so given but that they without exception emanated entirely from the said Defendant and not otherwise and I say that apart from his supposed power of putting my said late husband's spirit into communication with me I had no affection or even respect for the said Defendant but that the said Defendant by the means aforesaid worked upon my belief in his supposed power until he acquired almost unlimited control and influence over my mind during the continuance of which control and influence (which I felt utterly powerless to resist) the several transactions hereinbefore referred to took place.

19. The book now produced to me and marked with the letter B contains entries written by the said Defendant of sentences spelt out as I was induced by him to believe

Digitized by Microsoft®

and as I did believe by the spirit of my said late husband in manner aforesaid on various occasions and of circumstances in connection therewith and I refer particularly to the following passages written by the said Defendant on the 7th and 16th pages of such book and spelt out as I was induced by the said Defendant to believe and did believe by the said supposed spirit on the 22nd January 1867 and on another date which I am unable to recollect viz.: "My darling Jane—it would not be pleasing to me to have you sit with any medium but our son (meaning the said Defendant) at present I have good reasons for this" "I will tell you when I wish another medium than our son" (meaning the said Defendant) "It stands to reason Daniel is the best medium on earth we have chosen him for you what we have to say and what we have to do we can say and do thro' him" which words are confirmatory of my present conviction and belief that the several directions supposed as hereinbefore set forth to be given by the spirit of my late husband emanated entirely from the said Defendant and for his own purposes.

20. The several paper writings marked respectively C and D now produced and shown to me contain sentences written by the said Defendant Daniel Dunglass Home himself and spelt out on two different occasions by (as he induced me to believe and as I did believe) the spirit of my said late husband while the said Defendant was alone with me the first of such paper writings (written entirely by the said Defendant) on to the best of my recollection the 26th of February last being as follows:—"26th February—Daniel is correct and if you remember darling I made sounds on the floor that Sunday as you were going to bed Not that Tuesday but the following Monday And well in your senses but *we made you think this to be so* You longed for communications yet your very anxiety prevented our approach *We had to get control of your mind*" And in explanation of such last-mentioned paper writing I say that I had on or previously to the said 26th

Digitized by Microsoft®

day of February last in conversation with the said Defendant alluded to the first and original manifestations of the spirit of my said late husband (as I believed them to be) particulars of which are set forth in the second and following paragraphs of this my affidavit and that the said Defendant then denied that there had been any such manifestations during the first seven days of my aforesaid acquaintance with him and in corroboration of his statement appealed as he induced me to believe and as I believed to the spirit of my said late husband while he the said Defendant was alone with me as aforesaid and that the words last above quoted or words to precisely the same effect were spelt out as he induced me to believe and as I did believe by the said supposed spirit in manner aforesaid in answer to such appeal.

21. I also refer to the following sentence written by the said Defendant as aforesaid on the second occasion above referred to the date of which I am unable to recollect and comprised in the other of such paper writings viz. "Only remember Daniel is our medium all communications I have to give will be thro' him." And with reference to the sentences quoted in this and the preceding paragraph I say that they are corroborative of my full conviction and belief that I have in the several aforesaid transactions with the said Defendant Daniel Dunglass Home been the victim of gross and wilful imposition.

22. On or about the 16th day of June instant I received from the said Defendant Daniel Dunglass Home a letter written by him to me and dated June 17th 1867 which letter is now produced and shown to me and is marked with the letter E in which letter the said Defendant offers to come to an arrangement with me with reference to the subject matter of this suit but to which letter I have not replied nor do I intend to come to any arrangement whatever with him short of getting back all the property which he has acquired from me in manner hereinbefore appearing.

23. I depose to the several facts and circumstances

Digitized by Microsoft®

hereinbefore set forth from my own personal knowledge except where it is hereinbefore otherwise stated.

Sworn at my Office No. 33 Mark Lane in the City of London on the 26th day of June 1867
JANE LYON Before me Richd. Cattarns
A London Commissioner to administer oaths in Chancery.

This Affidavit on behalf of the Plaintiff is filed by DRUCE, SONS, & JACKSON, *Solicitors,* 10, *Billiter Square, in the City of London.*

Filed 5th November, 1867,

Between JANE LYON, Widow . . . *Plaintiff*
AND
DANIEL DUNGLASS HOME, and WILLIAM MARTIN WILKINSON . . . . . *Defendants.*

THE ANSWER of DANIEL DUNGLASS HOME, otherwise (at the Plaintiff's request) DANIEL HOME LYON, one of the above-named Defendants to the Bill of Complaint of the above-named Plaintiff.

IN ANSWER to the said Bill, I, DANIEL DUNGLASS HOME, otherwise DANIEL HOME LYON, say as follows:—

1. I was born in Scotland on the 20th March 1833 and from my earliest childhood I have been subject to the occasional happening of singular physical phenomena in my presence which are most certainly not produced by me or by any other person in connection with me I have no control over them whatever they occur irregularly and even when I am asleep Sometimes I am many months and once I have been a year without them They will not happen when I wish and my will has nothing to do with them I cannot account for them further than by supposing them to be effected by intelligent beings or spirits

Digitized by Microsoft®

Similar phenomena occur to many other persons In the United States of America I believe about eleven millions of rational people as well as a very great number in every country in Europe believe as I do that spiritual beings of every grade good and bad can and do at times manifest their presence to us I invariably caution people against being misled by any apparent communications from them These phenomena occurring in my presence have been witnessed by thousands of intelligent and respectable persons including men of business science and literature under circumstances which would have rendered even if I desired it all trickery impossible They have been witnessed repeatedly and in their own private apartments where any contrivance of mine must have been detected by their Majesties the Emperor and Empress of the French their Majesties the Emperor Empress and late Empress Dowager of Russia their Imperial Highnesses the Grand Duke and Duchess Constantine of Russia and the members of their august family their Majesties the King of Prussia the late King of Bavaria the present and late King of Wurtemberg the Queen of Holland and the members of the Royal family of Holland and many of these august personages have honoured and I believe still honour me with their esteem and good will as I have resided in some of their palaces as a gentleman and their guest not as a paid or professional person They have had ample opportunities which they have used of investigating these phenomena and of enquiring into my character I have resided in America, England, France, Italy, Germany and Russia and in every country I have been received as a guest and friend by persons in the highest position in society who were quite competent to discover and expose as they ought to have done anything like contrivance on my part to produce these phenomena I do not seek and never have sought the acquaintance of any of these exalted personages They have sought me and I have thus had a certain notoriety thrust upon me I do not take money

Digitized by Microsoft®

and never have taken it although it has been repeatedly offered me for or in respect of these phenomena or the communications which sometimes appear to be made by them I am not in the habit of receiving those who are strangers to me and I never force the subject of Spiritualism on any one's attention I trust that I am a sincere Christian I conscientiously believe as all the early Christians did that man is continually surrounded and protected or tempted by good and evil spirits I have in my circle of friends many who were not only infidels but atheists until they became convinced by the study of these phenomena of the truths of immortality and their lives have been greatly improved in consequence Some of the phenomena in question are noble and elevated others appear to be grotesque and undignified For this I am not responsible any more than I am for the many grotesque and undignified things which are undoubtedly permitted to exist in the material world I solemnly swear that I do not produce the phenomena aforesaid or in any way whatever aid in producing them In 1858 I married a Russian lady of noble family who was a god-daughter of the late Emperor Nicholas and educated by him She died in 1862 and by her I have one son christened "Gregoire" but alluded to in the conversations and letters hereinafter set forth by the pet name of "Sacha" The present Emperor of Russia has graciously consented to be his godfather and the Grand Duchess Constantine his godmother on the occasion of his being baptised into the Greek Church which is to take place.

2. Having met with considerable success as a public reader in America in the year 1865 I determined last year to go on the stage but my health which has been feeble for a long time proved unequal to the task and some of my friends who were desirous of investigating the phenomena aforesaid formed a society with the title of the Spiritual Athenæum taking rooms at No. 22 Sloane-street London and at their request I accepted the position

Digitized by Microsoft®

of resident secretary with a salary which post at the Plaintiff's desire I have since resigned The members of the said society are without exception persons of character and position who could gain nothing by aiding in or abetting fraud or deception The following extract is taken from their circular printed for distribution:—

"It will be a leading duty of the Executive Committee acting with the Council to make such arrangements as shall secure facilities for healthy useful and instructive communion to those who seek as well as those who are willing to give information 'concerning Spiritual gifts,' while promoting social intercourse aiming at loftier and holier objects, checking the spread of Materialism, upholding the truths and extending the influence of Christianity and bringing closer the bonds of Peace and Love among mankind, inculcating by another Power acting in accordance with Holy Writ and co-operating with the Christian teacher—duty to God and to Neighbour."

3. Under the circumstances hereinbefore mentioned and not otherwise I believe I am what is called a spiritual medium but I do not gain a living by it or make money by it I had some private means of my own I made some money in America by public readings unconnected with the phenomena aforesaid I twice only read a public lecture on Spiritualism which is still in my possession and I was for a short time such secretary as aforesaid Otherwise I do not to use the language of the Plaintiff's Interrogatory gain a living I do not profess and never did profess to have the power of evoking the spirits of deceased persons or of putting other persons in communication with them I have hereinbefore truly stated what occurs to me without any volition whatever of my own and I have never made any other profession whatever I am and have been for a long time as the Plaintiff well knows in feeble health Yet as the Plaintiff has thought fit to prefer against me charges of fraud and imposture of the basest character which are utterly untrue I desire the public cross-exami-

Digitized by Microsoft®

nation of myself and the Plaintiff as well as of all or such of the witnesses on both sides as the Court may think fit to allow.

4. On Monday the 1st October 1866 I received a letter signed Jane Lyon of whom I had never heard before requesting to be furnished with the terms of admission to the said Spiritual Athenæum According to the laws of the said society no one could be admitted as a member except by the "unanimous vote of the executive committee." I laid her letter before one of the members of the executive committee On the next day namely Tuesday the 2nd October 1866 Mrs. Jane Lyon the Plaintiff called upon me and stated that she was the writer of the letter before mentioned and entered into conversation with me respecting my book entitled "Incidents in my Life" which she said she had read with much interest and she also said she had been making enquiries about me She told me she had been a believer from her childhood in the occurrence of such phenomena as are therein mentioned though she did not know them by the name of Spiritualism. She also said she was a much more wonderful medium than I was She appeared to me however to dwell much less upon Spiritualism than on the fact of my knowing "them high folks" as she termed the royal and aristocratic personages mentioned in my book and she asked me if they were still my friends to which I answered that having done nothing to forfeit their esteem I believed they were She avowed her disbelief in the Bible at which I expressed my regret and I told her (as the fact is) that there are very many Christians of all denominations and clergymen also who are Spiritualists In fact with many thousands of persons the Bible is the foundation of their belief in Spiritualism while Spiritualism on the other hand strengthens their belief in the Bible as opposed to the prevailing Materialism of the day She asked to see my private rooms and looked at various pictures which I had there She was much struck by a family group of the

Digitized by Microsoft®

Grand Duchess Constantine of Russia and her family and asked how it came into my possession I told her as the fact was that Her Imperial Highness had presented it to me when I was last in Russia staying at the palace of the Grand Duke She said "Did she really give it to you with her own hand?" I told her as the fact was that such was the case and not only so but that Her Highness had even had the kindness to send to Warsaw on purpose for it The Plaintiff seemed much astonished and said "Well you are a celebrity" Then she asked me if I had ever stayed at the palace of the Emperor I told her as the fact was that I had done so "Well" she said "you are indeed a celebrity and it is only a pity you should be poor" I told her that it was well to be poor and that I wanted for nothing and also that I should be in a very comfortable position as soon as my affairs in Russia were settled She said "You may be comfortable even before that" I told her I was comfortable even now and had no desire ungratified She then asked me about my circle of friends in London and whether it included many "great folk" I told her as the fact was that I was exceedingly fortunate in my circle of friends She then enquired the terms of subscription to the Athenæum and I told her it was a large sum namely five guineas She made no reply but asked me to call on her on the following day to talk it over I told her I could not do so until Thursday the 4th instant I was rather pleased with her homely kindness and as I had occasion to call in Westbourne Terrace which was near her I thought I would gratify my curiosity by going to see her at home She enquired if she might call on me again in the interval but I told her it would be better to wait till the time fixed On leaving she said "Well I had expected to find you proud and stuck up from knowing so many great folks but I like you very much and I hope you will like me I think of going to Paris next year to the Exhibition would you like to go with me?" I laughed and said "Yes" She said "I hope we shall see a great

Digitized by Microsoft®

deal of each other" She said she had one request to make namely that I would give her my portrait saying she would prize it very highly I gave her one and thus ended my first interview with her She was an utter stranger to me I never having heard of her except from her said letter and from her dress and manner and the apparent relish she had for my aristocratic connexion I thought she might be a kind-hearted housekeeper but it never crossed my mind that she could be rich No allusion whatever was made to her late husband Charles Lyon and no spiritual manifestations whatever took place The Plaintiff did not as she now says offer to pay £10 nor any other sum to the Athenæum.

5. On Thursday the 4th October 1866 I called on the Plaintiff as requested by her and found her living in indifferent lodgings over a stationer's shop She asked me many questions about myself and told me she wondered at my accepting a salary as secretary to the Athenæum being such a celebrity that I ought to be rich and should be and with these words she handed me a cheque for £30 which I immediately declined She then said "Oh this is nothing to me I am very rich I might live in great style but I prefer to live as I do I like you and will be your friend" I told her I was not in the habit of taking presents from any one Finding I would not take her money she told me it was for the society of which I was secretary and not for myself She then questioned me again about my past life and enquired whether if I were to marry again my wife would be received by the great people I knew I told her I had not the slightest intention of ever marrying again and that I certainly should marry no one whom I could not present to my friends She then asked me what I would say to being adopted by herself for she had been thinking for some time of adopting a son who could take care of her She added "I will settle a very handsome fortune on you We will take a house and your son (whose name had been

Digitized by Microsoft®

mentioned) will live with us and have his tutor This will be an amusement to me You will have a handsome house to entertain your friends and we will travel abroad together when we like" I laughed at the scheme as a mere romance and asked what her relatives would say She said "Now I will tell you a little of my story and you will see how free and independent I am" And then she told me as the fact is that she was the illegitimate daughter of a tradesman in Newcastle who afterwards became a farmer That she could have no legal relations and that she did not know any of her father's family That her late husband was of good family and his family always held aloof from herself and husband and there were other reasons why she and her husband took a dislike to them and that he made over all his property which was very considerable to her before his death so that the probate of his Will cost only £50 and that not one of his relatives were mentioned in his Will She then went on to say that previous to her late husband's death he told her a change would come over her in seven years and that she thought it meant her death but that now she thought the event to occur was that she was to meet and adopt me I said that in that case I should not only have an adopted mother but that I would call her husband my spiritual adopted father inasmuch as he had foretold such a thing I said this in a laughing mood so much so that the Plaintiff seemed displeased and said that I seemed to take the whole thing as a joke I told her I certainly did and not a very good one either for I could not conceive how any one could talk thus to a man who was a perfect stranger to her She then said she had not finished her story and that she had lived such an isolated life since the death of her husband and that during the five years she had been in London her husband's family had shewn her so little attention that the previous winter she had spent in Yarmouth and some of them lived not far off yet she saw none of them and wished to see none of them The

Digitized by Microsoft®

men she said are parsons and my husband used to call them black coats and when he received letters from them particularly from his nephew Charles who writes with a great flourish he used to throw the letter from him and say it was enough to make one hate one's own name "Now" she added "I have lived five years in London in one lodging-house not this one and I only know an old woman who sells mixed sweets and with whom I used to sit and chat a great deal and a lodging-house keeper a Mrs. Pepper who is a bad one and a Mrs. Sims whom I have just picked up as a photographer and who has been a source of great comfort to me for I have been trying to live with a niece of my husband's but I could not do it and my comfort has been to get out and have a talk with Mrs. Sims Now you will introduce me to your friends and two people will be made happy one of them myself the other you" The doubt crossed me whether she was sober and in her right mind I said to her "Why I may be a scoundrel or an impostor for anything you know" "Oh dear no" she said "you're a public man and if you had done anything wrong the public would have been too glad to seize on it and show you up" Her reasons were so much to the point and her manner was so very earnest and affectionate that I thought she must be in her right senses and that she had well calculated the step she was urging on me to take but I told her it was all too hastily done I said "I fear you seek me for the strange gift I possess and as that is not at my control I might lose it" She said "Have I ever alluded to that it is true that will bring people about you and that is what I want I always select my lodgings in a place where there is bustle and confusion for I like it so I shall like to see your friends and nothing will spite my husband's family more than to see me amongst great folks I always swore I would be even with them some day and now I will" I told her that this was not the way I liked to look on the proceeding for I wished to harm no one or stand in no one's way She said

Digitized by Microsoft®

" Oh I'll tell that Mrs. Fellows such a story about it all that I shall allow you a thousand a year it will be such fun " I told her again that I could not like such an idea that I had gone thus far through life and no one could say ought against me or that I had ever sought to injure any one She rose and threw her arms about me and kissed me saying " it shall be just as you like darling " I did certainly think this rather violent but her age and the conversation we had just held seemed to be a justification of her conduct. She requested me as yet to say nothing about her to my friends further than that she had given £30 to the Athenæum.

6. There were no spiritual manifestations whatever at this interview I wrote to several of my friends at the time saying that a lady had given thirty pounds to the Athenæum simply from having read my work I determined not to see her for a day or two alone that she might in the meanwhile ask about me if her intention really was to do as she said for this reason I did not again see her till the 7th October 1866.

7. During this interview of the 4th October the Plaintiff said it was not for nothing that she was the daughter of a tradesman for it had made her a "capital woman of business" and that she liked to have everything well and legally done and wished me to consult a lawyer to know whether or no being adopted by her and taking her name gave me a legal right as heir to her property and " how the job was to be done."

8. From her statements to me I believe the Plaintiff to be a widow and that she has no child She has varied in the mention of her age to me sometimes saying that she was fifty-two at other times different ages so that I cannot answer her Interrogatory as to her age further than that she is extremely robust and vigorous both in body and mind and she is in the habit of boasting that she has never been confined to her bed by illness I believe that exclusive of her gifts to me her income is about £5,000 a

Digitized by Microsoft®

year arising from consols and mortgage securities She has told me but I have no independent knowledge on the subject that she was originally possessed of some property of her own She has also told me and I believe and charge it to be the fact that her influence over her husband the late Charles Lyon was so great that she prevailed upon him to make over the bulk of his property from time to time to her during his life and that he bequeathed the residue which was of trifling amount to her by his Will During the period of my intimacy with the Plaintiff she has told me that she used to quarrel with her late husband at times but yet I think she was attached though I cannot say whether greatly attached to him From her statements to me I believe that he was greatly attached to her and completely under her power and control.

9. Save as hereinbefore mentioned I cannot set forth as to my belief or otherwise whether she had heard she could be placed in communication with his spirit through the agency of a spiritual medium or how otherwise Under the circumstances hereinbefore appearing and not otherwise she did seek for and obtain an interview with me on the 2nd and not on the 3rd October 1866 at Sloane-street in the said Bill mentioned and she did on the 2nd and not on the 3rd October 1866 see me at Sloane-street and not elsewhere and I deny that I did by any means whatever induce her to believe nor to the best of my knowledge and belief did she believe that a manifestation of the spirit of her deceased husband took or was taking place as nothing of the sort occurred whether through my instrumentality or any otherwise howsoever And in answer to the Plaintiff's further Interrogatory I deny that I did on that occasion induce the Plaintiff to believe nor to the best of my knowledge and belief did she believe that the spirit of her deceased husband was in communication with her nor that certain expressions of endearment or any other expressions on the part of the spirit of which there

Digitized by Microsoft®

were in fact none were conveyed through the medium of me to her and I make out the contrary in manner hereinbefore appearing The Plaintiff was not much or in fact gratified thereby because nothing of the sort happened but she did under the circumstances hereinbefore stated and not otherwise desire me to call upon her on the following day but she did not promise to give me £10 or any other sum Under the circumstances hereinbefore stated and not otherwise I did in fact call upon the Plaintiff at her lodgings in Westbourne-place but not at her present lodgings in the said Bill mentioned on the 4th October 1866 and not on the day following the previous day and I deny that I did again or at all induce the Plaintiff to believe or that she did or could believe that the spirit of her deceased husband was manifested to her through my instrumentality or that she did thereupon though I admit that she did under the circumstances hereinbefore stated and not otherwise in fact give me the sum of £30.

10. On the 7th October 1866 I called upon the Plaintiff and she greeted me most warmly and affectionately and said she had now made up her mind to adopt me and asked me if I had seen a lawyer about it I said I had not and that I did not like her to act thus hastily in a matter of such importance She told me she had resolved to pay to my account £24,000 on the 11th of the month that she had at first intended the sum to be £30,000 but had now decided I should have only £700 a year to begin with to see how we got on together and that if she found me all she expected me to be she would give me much more afterwards She also told me she had watched with much interest the trial which had been going on relative to Bishop Colenso and that it had been her intention had he been deprived of his income to have given him a fortune adding "it is lucky for you I did not" She told me that her income was more than five thousand a year and that her husband saw none of his family and

Digitized by Microsoft®

that she had no feeling but that of distaste to them all with the exception of Mrs. Clutterbuck who was rich I felt like one in a dream at this strange conversation which I could not credit and rising from where I was seated myself at the piano The Plaintiff gave an exclamation of surprise and said "Turn your side face again that I may see your profile" I did so and the Plaintiff came where I was seated and said "Why I have seen you in visions these many years and the only difference was that your hair was lighter more of a golden yellow than it now is many many years ago even before you could have been born" She went on to say "Why even my father before he died told me I should adopt a son and I will have no one but you and whether you will or no I shall settle a fortune on you and you will be obliged to accept it" I told her it was cruel to talk thus to a man who was poor and she said "It is the only means I have of binding you to me I am alone I have and can have no relatives I had a fortune of my own of £30,000 so surely I can do with that as I please My husband's relatives look down on me because I am the natural daughter of a Newcastle tradesman So much the worse for them for I will prove to them that I may sit up if I please and pitch my money pound after pound out of the window and they and indeed no one has a right to interfere You are a gentleman and have friends in the best society I will shew them all that I can be received as well as they when the fancy takes me for I shall go out with you and your friends will come to us and my old age will become a joy instead of a burthen" I said "Well I promise you I shall love you as a mother and shall even call you mother if you like for there are plenty of old ladies whom I address and write to as mother" She replied in a very hasty manner "Thank you but the less of that kind of love the better I shall love your son with a mother's love he will be our darling" She asked if I would not like to have her see some of my

Digitized by Microsoft®

friends or even a legal man to talk it over with them and I told her I would She said "Very well I will go with "you to-morrow to call on any one you please or you may "come here with any one" I told her that for the moment I thought of no one but that there was plenty of time She made a singular remark which impressed me even at the time for she said "I am apt to change my "mind so you had better catch me while you can" I told her I had no desire to catch her and that the very thing I feared was that having taken me up so suddenly without cause she would put me down just the same. She only replied to this "O dear no I shall never tire of "you" At this moment she was standing near me and she went and sat down saying "I always have had my own way and unless you will promise to do as I wish you to you will only make me dislike you" She seemed to think for a moment and then said "Now I know what I shall do I shall give a fortune to your son and have him take my name I will take a house and have a tutor for him in fact I will adopt him and then you will have to see him and you would not dare to refuse anything for his good" She then asked me the day of the month and I told her it was the 7th She went to a tin box and brought out her cheque book and turning it came to a blank on which was written "Mrs. J. Fellowes" and to the best of my belief £5 but underneath was written "the "last to her for ever" while I was looking at it she kissed me on the brow and said "Now for the first to you from "your adopted mother who is this day a happy woman" she said "I asked for the day of the month because a "Sunday's date is not legal" She then wrote out and handed me a cheque and on looking at it I found it to be for £50 When she saw my surprise she came and kissed me on the brow and said "That is only a drop in "the ocean" I placed the cheque on the table and told her I must refuse it for though I was poor I was also proud and had always refused thus to accept money I

Digitized by Microsoft®

told her I was sensitive (as the fact is) that though people wished to pay me for the strange gift I possessed that I felt I had no right to obtain money from such a source She said "Why you foolish fellow I've seen nothing of your strange gift as you call it and though it is through your being celebrated for that that I first heard of you now that I know you I love you for yourself and should not care if you never had anything singular occur to you again" She then took up the cheque and folded it with the printed side out saying as she did so "You must always fold bank notes and cheques with the printed side out else you might throw them away as waste paper" I took the cheque and put it into my pocket Up to this time no phenomena known as spiritual manifestations had taken place at any interview between the Plaintiff and myself but as I rose to go there came sounds known as rapping. A call for the alphabet was made and the following sentence or words nearly similar spelled out "Do not my darling Jane say alas the light of other days for ever fled the light is with you Charles lives and loves you" Whether these sounds were produced by the Plaintiff who pretends to be a medium I cannot say but I solemnly swear that they were not produced by me I was not near the table when they occurred The Plaintiff alone was seated near the table She left her place in the most quiet manner and went into her bed room and I heard her unlock a box and she then brought and shewed to me a very badly executed water colour drawing of a house and on the back of the picture was written in the Plaintiff's handwriting "Alas the light of other days for ever fled" or words precisely similar and underneath "Binchester" She then said this was a very favourite place of her husband's but from family difficulties which she explained it was sold by an Order of Chancery and she also told me that she had told her husband previous to its being sold that she had seen in a vision it would be sold She also told me

Digitized by Microsoft®

that it was in the library of that very house she had first seen me in vision I was much surprised at the perfect calmness of the Plaintiff I solemnly swear that I did not seek to influence her in any way whatever except only against her own impulse and desire to force upon me a position of wealth also that I did not induce her to believe she was having communication with the spirit of her husband I did not know and could have had no means of knowing the name of his former estate of Binchester or of the words the Plaintiff had written on the picture as she had not mentioned Binchester or the picture to me before this I had made no inquiries as to who she was and as she told me on the Thursday she was only intimate with the wife of a photographer and an old woman who sells mixed sweets in Knightsbridge and a lodging-house keeper and as these persons were not in my circle of acquaintance I would not and did not see them I did not induce the Plaintiff to believe but then and repeatedly afterwards told her that the identity of all spiritual communications was most uncertain and that we must always use our own reason in judging them I have not been interrogated as to the above manifestations which I have related but I mention them because I have no wish to conceal the truth.

11. There were no other manifestations at this interview than those above stated The statements of the Plaintiff contained in the 2nd 3rd and 4th paragraphs of her affidavit filed in this suit on the 27th June 1867 as to the events therein alleged to have taken place are untrue and I believe and charge that the book to which she refers as though she had written down what occurred in it shortly after the events was not commenced until a much later period and after she turned against me as hereinafter mentioned and had planned to undo her gifts to me.

12. I deny that the Plaintiff did on the day mentioned in the Plaintiff's Interrogatory as the following day or on

Digitized by Microsoft®

any other day under the belief that the spirit of her deceased husband had again or in fact at all through my agency been brought into communication with her but I assert that she did for the totally different reason hereinbefore mentioned give me the further sum of £50.

13. I deny that I did by the means in the said Bill mentioned or by any other means acquire a great or any ascendancy over the mind of the Plaintiff and I did not by the exercise of what the Plaintiff now calls my alleged spiritual powers or in fact induce her to believe that what I represented to be communications from the spirit of her deceased husband to her were real communications as I never represented anything of the sort And I shall make out the contrary by proving from independent testimony that her charge of my exercising undue influence or in fact having any influence over her is wholly untrue I shall prove that it was I who was the victim and the sufferer that under the influence of gratitude for her unsought generosity to me and her many acts of real and unaffected kindness I put up with much that I felt to be galling and degrading that I made many efforts to return her gifts and sever the connection between us but that enfeebled as I was from severe and exhausting attacks of illness I had not the energy to throw off the dominion exercised over me by her strong will and her affectionate expressions of regret as well as the position I was placed in by the publicity that had been given to my change of fortune.

14. I called again on the Plaintiff on the Monday the 8th October 1866 a little after eleven a. m. and putting down the cheque for £50 said I could not and would not accept it The Plaintiff burst into tears and said she had thought a new and joyous life was opening to her for she had no friends and that it was cruel of me to treat her thus for she had been making so many plans for our future and as my health was delicate she wished she had not sold a cottage she had once possessed near the sea called Sea

Digitized by Microsoft®

View but that she had done so and now she would buy me a place near the sea where we might go together.

15. She then said that not only was her mind made up to adopt me and have me take her name but that it was to be done so surely that nothing could undo it and that she would make a new Will and that if she should by any chance die suddenly that I had her fortune contingent on taking her name for she was not in the habit of being influenced by any one but did as she pleased and that was why she did not and would not live with Mrs. Fellowes. She again entered into details concerning the whole family which would be injurious to them, so I omit them. She requested me to go to the bank myself to get the cheque cashed and said that she would be at my rooms at two o'clock precisely There were no spiritual manifestations whatever at this interview nor was any mention whatever made of spiritualism.

16. I would not go to the bank alone but asked my friend Mr. Rudall to accompany me I told him that the same lady who had given the £30 to the Society had now given me £50 to myself and as she lived in such poor lodgings and dressed so wretchedly I thought there must be something wrong about it and that perhaps it was all a myth and that the bankers would laugh at me It would not have surprised me in the least if they had told me they knew no such person. They however cashed the cheque.

17. The Plaintiff was awaiting my return in the shop below my rooms and she went first to my bedroom and looked about I shewed her a service of silver which belonged to my late wife and she said she did not like the form of the forks and that I had better sell them and put all my money in the funds where I should have plenty besides very soon I told her they were precious to me as a souvenir She again repeated her firm intention to adopt me and neither spirits nor spiritualism were alluded to She said she could not love me more if she had been my mother and adopt me she would "No no" she said "we

Digitized by Microsoft®

will live together and have a nice house we will make the money fly and nothing will spite my husband's family more There is no one I care about but Mrs. Clutterbuck and she is old and sickly as well as rich No I will enjoy the days I have to live." I told her that as I was a well-known man it would be much talked about "So much the better" she said "all your friends will be able to come and see you and you will be able to entertain them" I told her I must first see some of my friends as she first suggested to talk the matter over with them and begged she would not come to see me the next day and that on my side I would not visit her and that she might give the subject very serious consideration She again asked me who of my friends "a clever business man" could see her that she might talk it over with him for she added "I know no one in London" I told her that the only person whose name occurred to me at that moment was my old friend Mr. S. C. Hall who is an author of distinction and I said that he was sure to call on me the following day and I would ask him to see her.

18. It was not spelt out as the Plaintiff now says by the spirits that Mr. S. C. Hall was to go to her but the Plaintiff wrote or made me write his name down that she might remember it when he called and be sure to see him She afterwards at a much later period when as I now believe she was bent on creating a case against me made me write his name in a book as far as I can remember as if it came in a spiritual communication as she used often to dictate her pretended revelations for me to write and I did so at her request and under the influence and control she had acquired over me by her munificent kindness.

19. It was not spelt out as the Plaintiff now says on this occasion or on any other occasion that the Plaintiff was to adopt me.

20. It was now late and I had to dine out I again told her we must not see each other the next day and that I would ask Mr. Hall to see her She said "I see you

Digitized by Microsoft®

wear a very beautiful ring Is that a present from some grand person" I told her as the fact was that His Majesty the Emperor of Russia had given it to me on the occasion of my marriage "Oh yes" she said "I read of that in your book and he gave you another jewel when your child was born" I told her that that had been for my wife and she asked me if I had it and I told her I had I brought my small jewel case and shewed her the brooch which is of great beauty being a large emerald surrounded by sixteen large diamonds I also shewed her a beautiful large diamond in a ring and told her this was one she had not read about inasmuch as the Emperor had given it to me on my last visit to him when he had graciously consented to become my boy's god-father my wife having been the god-daughter of His late Majesty the Emperor Nicholas and that I did not consider it to be mine but rather the boy's from his god-father She said "Now as I am your mother I shall take care of these things for you" and she accordingly took with her on this the fourth time I had ever seen her in my life these two jewels worth several hundred pounds and at this moment she still has them And in November she took three most valuable bracelets and all the rich and valuable Indian and lace shawls and other laces and under clothing belonging to my late wife and she still retains possession of them She has repeatedly worn and displayed these ornaments in the society of my friends to whom I introduced her and others I submit that she should at least offer to return them as they in fact belong to my boy when she comes into a Court of Equity to demand the restitution of her gifts to me She said before leaving that although I had presents from crowned heads I would find that an old lady was the best friend for she would give me a present which would put me at ease for the rest of my life and that I might "snap my fingers" at my Russian law suit for I would not require it now She also asked me at once to attend to what was necessary about changing my name legally

Digitized by Microsoft®

and that it was to be Daniel Dunglass Home Lyon as she liked this best.

21. The details of all the circumstances are stamped in my memory from their peculiarity and from having had to repeat them so very often to my friends both in the presence and absence of the Plaintiff and on many occasions when she was present she always assented and would herself add little details which I had omitted to complete the narrative.

22. In answer to the Plaintiff's Interrogatory I deny that I did at such meeting or at any meeting whatever with the Plaintiff allege or represent to her or induce her to believe that the spirit of her deceased husband required her to adopt me as her son or to place me in a position of independence suitable to my rank and position in life as her adopted son My rank and position in life were infinitely superior to hers at the time for she had not maintained the rank and position to which her husband's station and her wealth might have entitled her It was I who gave her rank and position of which she was entirely destitute She gave me wealth and left me no freedom in its use Before I knew her I could and did give much more to charitable objects than she would allow me to do afterwards And save as aforesaid I made no allegation to the Plaintiff on that occasion nor did I at the same time or at any time allege or represent to the Plaintiff or induce her to believe nor to the best of my knowledge and belief did she believe that the spirit of her deceased husband desired that Mr. Hall (in the said Bill named) should be sent for nor did I make any other allegation or representation to the Plaintiff respecting the said Mr. Hall than is hereinbefore mentioned.

23. On the next day Tuesday the 9th October 1866 the said Mr. S. C. Hall called on me and I related the simple outline of the case saying it was an old lady without any children or relations who had taken a liking to me and wished to adopt me as her son Mr. Hall in the

Digitized by Microsoft®

most decided manner refused to go near her and said "Either you are insane and telling me a falsehood or she is one of the two and I will in no way have my name mixed up with the affair" I recalled to him that he had known me some years and that he had known my wife and reproached him with a want of friendly feeling in thus refusing to see one who wished to assist me and after nearly an hour's persuading he said "As she wants to be a member of the Athenæum write me a letter of introduction and I will call and speak to her on that subject but unless she herself broaches this adoption I will not allude to it."

24. He was absent more than an hour and was much agitated on returning He said "Why it is the most wonderful thing I ever heard of She tells me she is worth some hundreds of thousands and asked me what I thought she should settle on you at once which she could have the power of adding to but not of taking away from" I told her that two or three hundred a-year if you lived with her would suffice to which she said "Oh that's not enough" He said that she wouldn't speak or let him speak about spiritualism and he brought back the letter of introduction in his pocket without having presented it Finding from Mr. Hall's conversation that he thought her not only sane and in her right mind but a very sharp business woman who gave efficient reasons for what she had contemplated doing I decided to accept what she offered me.

25. I did not see the Plaintiff all this day but as she had told Mr. Hall that she wished him to meet me the next day at twelve I went on Wednesday the 10th October 1866 at half-past eleven again to beg that she would at least delay for a time what she wished to do I told her as the fact was and as she knew that I was ill and that a week or two's absence would do me good She said I know that and you shall go just as soon as the "job is done" She then said that she had written to me

Digitized by Microsoft®

for the last time in my name of Home and it was a most important letter for she had so fully decided on giving me £700 a-year that nothing would stop her and the letter was to prove why she did so "For" she added "I am a capital woman of business and as my Will now stands if anything should happen to me before I can carry out a deed of gift the family would be sure to be down on you and I would rather see the money in the fire than they should have it I only wish I had not given my husband's (your father as you are to call him) gun away for I wish you had it" Mr. Hall came at this juncture and she at once went to her box and produced a bundle of stock receipts Mr. Hall did not to the best of my belief touch one of the papers The Plaintiff herself picked out the papers with the largest sums and put a pin through them and handed them to me It was not spelled out as she now says that I was to be her adopted son or anything about her funded property or that she was to hand over the stock receipts to the said S. C. Hall or that he was to hand them over to me or anything to that or the like effect whatsoever to the best of my remembrance and belief.

26. I never caused any spiritual manifestations or communications to be made to the Plaintiff Whatever communications were at any time apparently given were caused by the Plaintiff herself if they were caused by anybody and were at her request written by me in a book narrating everything that occurred between us which was read over in the presence of the Plaintiff and no paper or papers were burnt by me as the Plaintiff untruly states I do not remember what the apparent communications were but when I see the book which I wrote I can easily ascertain whether it has been altered since and if not I shall be able to state accurately all the circumstances that happened This book was afterwards read through to Mr. Shorter in the presence of the Plaintiff and she then assented to its containing a true and complete narrative of the adoption as was the fact The Plaintiff took away the

Digitized by Microsoft®

book and kept it and I have never seen it since It is still in her possession unless she has destroyed it It is not the book marked "B" referred to in her said affidavit filed on the 27th June 1867.

27. When the Plaintiff said as she did on this occasion that she would give me £24,000 Mr. Hall said "Do my good lady take time and think this well over Do not act so hastily" And I joined with him in saying so but she only said "What is 24,000 to me in comparison with having a son that I can love and who will be kind to me" It is untruly stated by Plaintiff that on this occasion a gold snuff box was given to Mr. S. C. Hall She gave it to him about a month later namely in November 1866 It is worth about £3 or £4 and she has lately recalled it She also gave him at the same time namely in November 1866 a silver pencil case which Mr. Hall of his own accord returned when she demanded a restitution of her other gift to him Mr. Hall gave her from time to time many valuable books which she has not thought it necessary or becoming in her to return Mr. Hall did not and could not have said as the Plaintiff now swears that it was too late to go to the bank for it was then not more than one o'clock . The Plaintiff wished to know the name of a stockbroker who could sell out for her and said it was usual for her own bankers to transact all such business but that "till the job was done she did not care about them knowing it" I then left her and having ascertained the name of the firm of stockbrokers Fox, Taylor and Backhouse Tokenhouse-yard I returned to Mrs. Lyon the same day with their names she wrote them a letter and requested me to take it to them in the City myself alleging that as the sum was a large one and they did not know her they might think it a hoax I took the letter she had written to the brokers in my hand and said to her "You have not yet known me ten days and this is not the tenth time you have seen me and you are making me a rich man Oh do for heaven's sake think well of what you are doing" She caught me in her arms and kissed me saying "This

Digitized by Microsoft®

is only a drop in the ocean" There were no manifestations whatever and no mention made of the subject of spiritualism on this occasion.

28. I took the letter to Messieurs Fox, Taylor and Backhouse and the same day I received by post the following letter which must have been written and sent before the interview between Mr. Hall myself and the Plaintiff on the same morning I swear that I was not near Mrs. Lyon when it was written and not even in the house and in nowise influenced her to write it and except for her allusion to it as aforesaid knew nothing of it or its contents before I received it It was her own free action and was but a part of the business tact which she has ever displayed throughout the whole of her proceedings with me.

"18, Westbourne Place, Hyde Park,
"10th October, 1866.

"My dear Mr. Home,—I have a desire to render you *independent* of the world and having *ample* means for the purpose without abstracting from any needs or *comforts* of my own I have the greatest satisfaction in now presenting you with and as an *entirely* FREE GIFT from me the sum of £24,000 & am

"My dear Sir, yours very truly & *respectfully*,
"JANE LYON.

The underlineations[1] in this and her other letters herein set forth were made by herself.

29. Either on the evening of the 10th or the morning of the 11th October I received another letter from the Plaintiff beginning "My dear Daniel, I want you to take a nice mutton chop for your breakfast before you come. I write knowing you. timidity to come and be made a rich man" or words to that effect and signed "Yours affectionately Jane Lyon" The Plaintiff as I believe after she began to fabricate her case against me abstracted this last mentioned letter from amongst my papers as herein-

[1] Now printed in italics and small capitals.

Digitized by Microsoft®

after appears The other letter set forth above escaped her by happening not to be amongst my other papers.

30. On the following day namely Thursday the 11th October 1866 I called at her request and we went into the City in a cab There were no manifestations in the house before leaving and none in the cab while going into the City the Plaintiff sat very near me with my hands in hers under her shawl all the way to the City and when we were going down Holborn Hill she turned and said "This my darling boy is one of the happy days in my life and I never expected to be so happy again The feeling that I had money and a parcel of people for whom I cared nothing might think I had made a Will in their favour and so be looking out for my death has ever worried me for I know they all speak of me as 'the old woman' I don't know how many Wills I have made Let's see one just a month or so after my husband died I left all to one of his sisters and then I have in others distributed it about That horrid Mrs. Pepper's daughter was in one and when I was making another Will after her death Mrs. Pepper had the impudence to ask me to put in Joe her son because he was Louisa's favourite brother but I told her I should do nothing of the sort" The Plaintiff has in fact at different times made at least five Wills that she has told me of In one she told me she had largely benefited her adopted daughter Fanny Hemming We drove straight to her bankers and not straight to the brokers as the Plaintiff untruly states and I left her alone with them while I fetched the broker to see her identified We then went to Token-house Yard and the Plaintiff began asking if the Back-house of the firm was in any way related to Jonathan Backhouse of Darlington (I should mention that the day before she had said the same thing to me and hoped they were for then they would know her name as Mr. Lyon had transacted business with Jonathan Backhouse) To the best of my remembrance she told them that she had adopted me and she did the same to Mr. Young at the

Digitized by Microsoft®

bank of Williams, Deacon and Company in Birchin-lane who proved her identity We then went to the Bank of England and the sale was made I did not see the cheque or money for it But the Plaintiff directed the brokers to lay it out in the New Three per Cent. Annuities which was immediately done and the brokers bought and sold notes and the stock receipts were handed to her and she took them away with her On returning to the office in Tokenhouse Yard she wanted to pay the broker's bill and not having her cheque book sent me to the bank to buy her one I did so leaving her alone with the brokers and I have been informed by them and believe that she then told them truly the story of her adoption of me.

31. In answer to the Plaintiff's interrogatories I say that the said Mr. Hall was and is a friend of mine and save and except as hereinbefore truly appears I deny that the said Mr. Hall was accordingly or in fact sent for or that any other meeting at this time than is hereinbefore mentioned took place between him the Plaintiff and myself And I deny that I or the said Mr. Hall or either of us at such meeting or at any other meeting alleged or represented to the Plaintiff or induced her to believe or to the best of my knowledge and belief that she did believe that the spirit of her deceased husband required her to produce her stock receipts or any of them or to go to the Bank of England or to transfer stock equivalent in value to £24,000 sterling or to any other amount to me or to sell the same and give me the proceeds as a provision by the Plaintiff for me as her adopted son I deny that there was any allegation or representation then made by me and the said Mr. Hall or by either of us to the Plaintiff And I deny that the Plaintiff accordingly or in fact in the full conviction and belief that she was fulfilling the wishes of her deceased husband communicated to her through the medium of me or so far as I know for any other reason than is hereinbefore stated went on or about the 10th October 1866 or at any other time to the Bank of England with me or any

Digitized by Microsoft®

other persons or person and I did not know that she signed a book there but I have since been informed and believe that it would have been necessary for her to do so and therefore I presume she did on the occasion of the hereinbefore mentioned sale and purchase and under the circumstances hereinbefore stated and not otherwise I admit that a large sum of Bank £3 per Cent. Consolidated Annuities belonging to the Plaintiff and representing in value £24,000 or thereabouts was sold and not transferred and save and except that the proceeds thereof were as hereinbefore stated invested for my benefit in the purchase of £3 per Cent. Reduced Annuities and the papers relating to the same given to the Plaintiff I deny that the proceeds of such sale or of any part thereof amounting to £24,000 sterling or to any other sum were received by me and I make out the contrary in manner aforesaid.

32. I deny that the whole or any part of the said sum of £24,000 was obtained by me from the Plaintiff through the alleged ascendancy or power which the Plaintiff falsely alleges I had acquired over her mind by the means in the said Bill mentioned and I make out the contrary in manner herein appearing.

33. I went to Brighton for my health as had been previously arranged with the Plaintiff on the following day namely the 12th October 1866 and I solemnly swear that during the whole of the day when we went in the cab together as aforesaid both before and during the completion of the said gift no mention was made of spiritualism or of any matter connected with it save in the office of the said brokers when the Plaintiff mentioned me to be the celebrated Mr. Home but that I was now to take her name I wrote to the Plaintiff from Brighton and begged she would undo what she had done She said that she would only write to me as Daniel Dunglass Home Lyon and by so doing people would see that the celebrated Daniel Dunglass Home was now in reality a Lyon.

34. Much correspondence passed between us during

Digitized by Microsoft®

my absence as I wrote every day to her I have not kept copies of my letters to her and I saw them in her possession in the month of March 1867 and she has them still unless she has destroyed them They were both affectionate and grateful and I told her (speaking relatively) that all I had in the world belonged to her and that she could take back what she had given and I thanked God and all good angels for sending me so kind a mother There was but little mention made by either of us of spiritualism and scarcely any allusion to her late husband All her letters to me are addressed to "D. D. Home Lyon Esq."

35. On the 13th October 1866 she wrote and sent me the following letter addressed to Brighton :—

"18 Westbourne Place, Hyde Park,
"Octr. 13/66

"My dear Son,—I have just received a letter from you this morning from Brighton. I like the G. Hotel tho' I had never lived in it, but have been shewn it all over I do not know if it is the same manager he was marked with the small pox, but he was most attentive to me and quite a gentleman, also the inspectress a lady Miss Jessie Thomas she went up in the lift with me and shewed me the bedrooms and baths, she has left I *believe* now, they were the manager 2 years ago, I was then at Gladding's the silversmith's King's Road at Yarmouth last year I spent several months Kimberley Terrace, Esplanade; now, my son, I must first begin to get angry with you, how could you *possibly* take a *cold* bath, which is I am sure the worst thing you could do in your state, now I request you immediately to go and consult a doctor and have an English prescription for me to see I am half a doctor myself and am sure you have *inflammation* of a serious description let your health be *permanently established* is the first object for you to consider if you wish to add to my comforts, you must excuse me if I tell you at our first acquaintance I rather felt a repugnance

Digitized by Microsoft®

towards you when you said 'Mother I shall so love you' I said and drew away from you, 'The less of that the better I shall love your child,' now I am quite altered, I feel so anxious on your account and afraid you should *be ill* or anything should happen to you that I am sure it is a mother's maternal love towards her beloved child so now if you *value* my comfort, my dear son take *care* of *yourself* and attend to what the doctor says and prescribes for you, do not be tempted with wine it is to stimulating, I shall seal this letter with your father's seal *previous* to his *marriage* the next after his marriage the next with my own seal ladies have no motto or crests the letter of your friend I could not well make out and perhaps you cannot make out mine I had a bad day yesterday my cold was worse to-day it is better thanks to our *Great God* Your friend knew a Jane Lyon My husband's aunt Lady Jane Lyon was the sister of John 9th Earl of Strathmore and aunt to Thomas the 10th 11th Earl of Strathmore sister to Lady Ann Syman the mother of Lady Ravensworth she was a dear good creature very dark and shortest of the family she promised me an amber cabinet the notorious Sir John Dean Paul was her trustee and executor and all her valuables disappeared, her property was divided amongst her nieces and nephews that was secured on the Glamis and Strathmore Estates one of her sisters Lady Susan Lyon married General Lambton father of the first Lord Durham. Now my dear Daniel I fear I have tired you with this stuff be sure you attend to the instructions I have given you respecting your health that is the *greatest consequence* to me I have written to our darling in answer to one from him and expect him here to-morrow if fine but not to come if it rains to take another opportunity with his friend I have bought him a pretty book suitable for his age *full of pictures* the lady you mentioned coming yesterday never came and I was glad for I was ill and not quite well now but a great deal better When you *want* money you know we *can coin* it so do not be afraid but act cautiously attend

Digitized by Microsoft®

to your health and doctor's advice it is not by acting for the *good of an hotel that will do you good*—I must conclude for the post is closing,

"Your affectionate mother,

"JANE LYON."

"P.S.—The post has gone so I open my letter to tell you I have read your letter again and find I have in my hurry made a mistake it is a warm bath you have taken instead of a cold bath and I am so glad for that will do you good Excuse me for being so stupid keep yourself calm and know that the great God is working for you.

"From loving mother,

"JANE LYON."

I did not at the time understand her statement about having felt repugnance to me at first which was entirely contrary to her previous statements to me and to others or why she should have alluded to loving my child whom she had not yet seen but I did not trouble myself about it.

36.—On the 11th October she had unknown to me written and sent the following letter to my little boy:—

"18, Westbourne Place, Hyde Park,
"11th October, 1866.

"My dear Sacha,—You tell me your father came to you last night and woke you out of a sound sleep, did you not think that very naughty 'No,' you say 'I was so very glad to see him that I never thought of sleep or Bedfordshire." He comes my child in joy to tell you that the *great God* had found him a mother who would be kind to him and you his boy. You must be good and the great God will bless and love you for ever God is so kind and loving to all good people like *your father* and I have heard you are so good and gentle that I am sure I shall like you, and if it is a fine day on Sunday next I shall be glad to see you but if it rains I shall see you with pleasure and your friend Mr. Perdicaris another time I hope your dear father will receive benefit at

Digitized by Microsoft®

Brighton he is not very well you will pray for him will you not and God will bless you.

"My dear Sacha, your affectionate Grandmother,

"JANE LYON."

37.—On the 15th October while I was still at Brighton she wrote and sent me the following letter:—

"18, Westbourne Place,

"Hyde Park, 15th Octr. /66.

"My dearest Son,—I have just time before the post goes, to write a few words, our dear little Sacha and his friend Mr. Perdicaris was here yesterday, he is a dear boy I love him, and kissed him many times, I like your friend *very much indeed* he brought an umbrella with him which a friend of yours who last accompanied you to Henley left behind, will you darling tell me who is the gentleman or his address that it may be sent to him. I enclose you the papers of *your fund* security you will be sure not to lose it and when you have shown it to your friend Dr. Gully, some other time when you return I can have it to take care of for you I am glad you are going to Malvern to your friend who will care for you, but how will you get oysters there they are strengthening and good you can take a little barrel with you and get *strong* and well as soon as you can avoid everything hurtful I think the sea air too strong for you My cold is not better but progressing. I fear you cannot make this out in such haste.

"I am, my darling Son,

"Your affectionate Mother,

"JANE LYON."

38. The papers of my fund security which the Plaintiff enclosed as she said in the last letter were the stock receipt and broker's note relating to the transfer of stock representing £24,000 mentioned in the 8th paragraph of her affidavit filed in this suit on the 27th June 1867 in which she swears that "No account receipt or other paper

Digitized by Microsoft®

in connection with the transaction was given to her on that occasion or subsequently."

39. On the 16th October 1866 the Plaintiff wrote and sent me the following letter to Malvern where I had gone for my health:—

"Tuesday night.

"My dear Daniel,—I am glad you feel better you are amongst your dear friends at Malvern that you love so well I trust your health will improve I sent a letter to you yesterday which you ought to have had by 1 o'clock enclosing your security fund papers I thought you would like it with you I hope they will forward it to you I am now quite annoyed I should have sent it as I fear it is lost, there is two stamps on the letter Pray write immediately you get and pray *write* to the managers to forward it to you I shall be quite uncomfortable untill I hear you have got it you ought to have had it about. I have no time to say more.

"God bless you, dear son,

"And believe me, your affectionate mother,

"JANE LYON."

40. On the 17th October 1866 she wrote and sent me the following letter:—

"18, Westbourne Place, Hyde Park,
"17th Octr. /66.

"My dear Daniel,—I am glad you got my letter with enclosure I was afraid it was entirely lost however all well that ends well present my very kind love to your dear friend & Miss Gully for her very kind letter to me with their polite invitation to the Priory I will with pleasure avail myself of it another time I have sent her 2 photographs of myself in lieu of three pretty views she has sent thanks for them I have been at Malvern many years ago previous to my marriage with the best of men your spiritual father Charles Lyon I went along with my father who took me to see England and North Wales and Cumberland.

Digitized by Microsoft®

"My dear Son,—I am really very much pleased to hear you are a little better but it will take time to reinstate you in good health I hope Dr. Gully with God's assistance will do so in the meantime you must not think of returning to London until you are quite better in 2 or 3 weeks you *may* be so then drop me a line to say you are but I should not agree that you should come untill I receive a note from Dr. Gully with his sanction and approval for giving up the treatment you will be subject to under his care He saved your life 5 years ago and I think you are in just such a state at death's door, therefore do not flatter yourself before your time comes for you to throw up your hat and say thank God for *health* and *wealth* and a good *kind doctor* You do not mention your friend's umbrella, what is his name, where does he live, and I will send it to him Dear little Sacha behaved very well he was pleased with his book I gave him a guinea he gave it to his uncle saying he would lose it he is very fond of rowing a boat and fishing. I hope they will soon come to London for I should so like to see the spiritual painting, how very wonderful. With kind love to yourself and all your dear kind friends in haste.

"My dear Daniel, your affectionate mother,

"JANE LYON."

She here alludes to what I had said that her husband would be my spiritual father as she was my mother The person mentioned as the uncle of my boy is not his uncle but a friend We are rather in the habit of calling our friends relatives as an affectionate mode of expression.

41. I had been desirous she should leave London with me but she refused Dr. Gully desired me to ask her to visit him and his sister wrote as well as myself requesting it. She refused to come then so little was my influence over her even at this time.

42. In this letter she speaks of me as "at death's door" and in another letter written to me on the 24th October she fears I am on the edge of a precipice and the

Digitized by Microsoft®

least pitch will send me headlong I was indeed and had been for some time very ill.

43. About the middle or end of October 1866 I was having a miniature of her late husband taken from a photograph she had given me painted by Mr. Egley as a surprise for her I had it beautifully mounted as a brooch set in diamonds of mine of great value and afterwards gave it to her I wrote to her to ask the colour of the late Mr. Lyon's eyes to which she replied in a letter wrongly dated the 9th October In that letter she speaks of Mr. S. C. Hall whom she now calumniates in her said affidavit "The kind friends the Halls are going to Brighton to-morrow" And she says to me "If you are well enough to come up the same time and not by any means before I shall be most glad now recollect not before if you do my dear son I will not see you" and she gives me medical advice.

44. On Thursday the 18th October 1866 I came to see Mrs. Lyon hoping to induce her to return to Malvern with me but I could not persuade her to do so.

45. On the 19th October 1866 she wrote and sent me the following letter to Malvern :—

"18, Westbourne Place, Hyde Park,
"Friday morning, October, 1866.

"My dear Son,—I hope you got safe to the priory without catching any cold so miserable a night it was I was so very vexed at myself for giving you your father's empty purse I should have put some money in it but you were in such a hurry It quite escaped my memory although I intended to have offered you some before you left Now let me know how I can send you some a check is of no use but I could send a post office order you must *enquire* at the post office and let me know the particulars what I am to do and the sum you want I hope you found dear little Sacha well Did he get his little book? Did you see the *spiritual painting?* Please to tell Dr. Gully with my respects that I am ½ a doctor and felt your

Digitized by Microsoft®

pulse and found it very wiry and hard which proves to me that there is some serious *inflammation* somewhere about you that *must be cured* or otherwise all your *baths* will be of no *avail* I am certain in your present state all stimulants are poison though given and taken with the best motives but we must not kill with kindness which is often done with those we best love and *best love us* Will the baths you take *cure* inflammation without any other mode? I fear not without internal means however I trust all will be well Pray let me know the *postage rules* for Malvern, viz. what time letters should be posted here for Malvern.

"I am with every kind wish for your health and *comfort*,

"Your affectionate mother,

"JANE LYON."

Not only did she urge this purse on my acceptance but also the watch of her husband though I had my own watch and told her I had no less than two others She so urged the acceptance of it that I took it She said she wished me to have something with the family crest on it The watch was out of repair and in December I had it repaired Two days after it was repaired Mrs. Lyon asked me to return it to her I did so with all the pleasure imaginable for I had never wished to have it.

46. From her urgent way of forcing things on me this being only the seventh or eighth time I had seen her in my life my estimate of her character was that if I did not accept I should give offence As she again alluded to money I wrote and asked her for twenty pounds though I did not require it for I still had a greater part of the fifty pounds she had given me on the 7th October In the 8th paragraph of her said affidavit she suppresses all mention of her having pressed me to accept money as appears by the lastly-stated letter and says only "I sent to him in accordance with his request on or about the 28th October last a cheque for £20 for his own use."

47. In a letter which she wrote and sent to me on the 21st October 1866 addressed to Malvern where I was

Digitized by Microsoft®

staying after giving me much medical advice and wishing to get rid of the inflammation that she says is consuming me she says "There is a great work for you to do I am gifted with a knowledge *you have not* I wish you to be a living worker not a *dead* one" Hundreds of times has she said these words to me "I am gifted with a knowledge you have not" and would then make me write her ideas or impressions In the same letter she also says "Dr. Hawksley called but I did not see him Mr. Hall said he wished I had but he did not cure your wife. He would not cure you" In the 9th paragraph of her affidavit filed in this suit the Plaintiff swears that at some period subsequent to the 9th November 1866 she found out that the said Dr. Hawksley was an intimate friend of mine but of whom she knew nothing I had told her that he was my medical adviser and friend and that he as well as my other friends would call upon her in my absence and introduce themselves to her as she particularly desired And as they in fact did The said Dr. Hawksley is one of the leading physicians and is on the staff of the Margaret Street Hospital for consumption.

48. She wrote and sent to me on the 24th October 1866 the following undated letter addressed to Malvern:—

"18, Westbourne Place, Hyde Park, London,
"October.

"My dear Daniel,—You say do not worry about my health I cannot help it God has given me a son and I much fear he is on the edge of a precipice the least pitch will send him headlong You say to me you are better to Mr. Hall *not so well* which shall I believe I am anxious to think the best I like you to sleep your nature requires rest it is almost worn out by anxious thoughtful care I well know my dear boy what you must have suffered which has added tenfold to your malady now you have the brightest of prospects before you repelling those of darkness look forward with joy to the bright union of glory resplendent with happiness God your Father I trust will

Digitized by Microsoft®

assist you and impart a healthy influence over your frame and enable you to throw off the seeds of sickness and disease which has so long had dominion over you Do not think of returning until you are better the air will be good for you *rest* and kind friends I trust will reinstate you My cold is much better thank you Lemon juice and sugar is good for me also for you it will not turn acid on the stomach but act as a stimulant I have written you a long letter to little purpose and heartily tired I conclude with my best wishes for your health and happiness and am,

"My dear Son, your affectionate mother,

"JANE LYON."

And again on the 28th October 1866 she wrote and sent to me the following letter:—

"18, Westbourne Place, Hyde Park,
"28th October, 1866.

"My dear Daniel,—I herewith enclose you a cheque for Twenty pounds the sum required by you You say you feel so much better that you are *almost* sure the Doctor will let you come to London on Thursday Now I beg you will not come unless the Dr. considers you strong enough and not likely to get any better by *remaining longer* where you are Does he think if you were to go to *Torbay or Torquay* it would be more beneficial You believe you are consumptive and all here think the same What does the Dr. say is *your complaint* and what the cure The painting is over and smell also I shall be glad to see Miss Ellen Gully when in Town or any friend of yours and *yourself* when well which I trust in the *great* God will *soon* be is the sincere wish of your Mother Jane Lyon Now dear Daniel do not come on Thursday if you are not well enough and the Doctor does not approve of it. You will be sure to let me know what he says.

"J. LYON.

"D. D. Home Lyon, Esq.,
"Priory, Malvern."

49. Again in a letter dated the 29th October 1866

Digitized by Microsoft®

which she wrote and sent to my little boy to whom she had given a story book with pictures in it she hopes he will learn to be clever and good and grow to be a great and good man that is what his father requires him to be and so does his grandmother and yet notwithstanding the expressions in these letters the Plaintiff in the 18th paragraph of her said affidavit swears that apart from my supposed power of putting her said late husband's spirit into communication with her she had no affection or even respect for me Again in the 9th paragraph of her affidavit filed on the 18th July 1867 she repeats that she did not care at all for me personally and that I was nothing to her.

50. In another letter which she wrote and sent to me about this time she said she would have loved me just as much if I had not been a medium and that she was only too thankful to have done for me as she did having made two people happy one of the two being herself This letter I fully believe she has also abstracted from amongst my papers which she frequently examined during my absence but I have the envelope still.

51. I returned from Malvern the 1st of November 1866 and found the Plaintiff most delighted to see me She told me that I must at once attend to having my change of name made a "legal job" for the family were up in arms and had been sending her all the newspaper notices of her having given me money She shewed me a letter which she had had from Mrs. Clutterbuck enclosing a notice from the "Athenæum Newspaper" where it was said the sum given was ten thousand pounds and she wished me to write to the editor and rectify the mistake and to say that it was twenty-four "And would soon be fifty thousand" again alleging that this would spite the family and increase my celebrity On both grounds I refused At this very moment the servant announced the arrival of two of my friends and I went to the door to meet them She told me she had been thinking a deed of

Digitized by Microsoft®

gift necessary and that when I publicly took her name she would make one out I am so little of a business man that I did not know what she meant I told her there was time enough about the name At six o'clock my friend Mr. Rudall came and after spending the evening went away with me This is the gentleman of whom the Plaintiff in the 9th paragraph of her said affidavit filed on the 27th June 1867 swears that she found out at some period subsequent to the 9th November 1866 he was an intimate friend of mine but of whom she knew nothing There were no spiritual manifestations whatever but upon this occasion she brought out a roll of papers and laughingly shewed them to me saying she either had shown or would shew them to people as real communications and she thought them so good that she wished me to write them in a book for her in form of a dialogue purporting to be from her husband to herself I told her I could only treat them as fictions In fact they had little meaning in them.

52. She made me take the papers with me to my rooms that I might copy them there and shew them to my friends She also called my attention to the fact that there was a certain similarity in our hand-writing which in pencil writing is perhaps slightly the case I took the papers with me I never destroyed any papers relating to any business transactions with the Plaintiff or any real or supposed spiritual communications as she untruly states in her said affidavit.

53. On 1st November, 1866, she wrote and sent me the following letter:—

"1st Novr., /66.

"My dear Daniel,—Can you contrive to bring me your receipts to look at I fancy there is a mistake in your funds papers you know the sum in my papers was £28,000 and in your fund papers they only make £27,566 8*s.* 3*d.* I wish you had had consols like what my husband your father and myself always had I do not like annuitys I wish

Digitized by Microsoft®

my Bankers had done the business the same as mine bring the papers with you to copy I have got a book Take a nice mutton chop for breakfast Do you like chocolate I think it is more nutritious than tea for you I hope you went to bed soon but I fear you *did not* as you had your friend And I am my dear Daniel,

"Your affectionate mother,

"JANE LYON."

The above letter illustrates her rapid changes of mind.

54. I had on returning from Malvern given to the Plaintiff the fund papers and kept the broker's note she had sent me I did so because in her letter she had said "You will give them to me to take care of for you" on going to see her on the 2nd I took the paper as desired and she told me she did not like "annuities" I did not know to what she alluded and she pointed out on the heading of the paper £3 per Cent. Annuities As she always kept my papers with her own I cast by chance my eyes on one of her papers and drew her attention to the fact that annuities were also written thereon She read it but still she would not acknowledge she could be in the wrong and so told me I must put mine in the same funds as hers were She made me there and then write to the brokers to sell out at once and make the change into consols no delay allowed The following letter which she wrote and sent to me on the 2nd November 1866 will show the haste and determination of her character She does not even wish to see me unless all is as she wishes:—

"2nd Novr.

"My dear Daniel,—Do not dear come over to-night unless you have got the funds settled Come to-morrow about 12 or 1 o'clock.

"Your affectionate mother,

"JANE LYON."

55. The Plaintiff in the 8th paragraph of the said affidavit filed on the 27th June 1867 alludes to this trans-

Digitized by Microsoft®

action thus "The said Defendant on or about the 5th Novr. 1866 as appears by a stock receipt (left by him accidentally as I believe in my possession) invested £23,913 17*s.* 3*d.* cash being as I verily believe part of the aforesaid sum of £24,000 so acquired by him as aforesaid in the purchase in his own name of the sum of £26,756 15*s.* 5*d.* Consolidated Bank Annuities" The Plaintiff told me and I believe that another reason for her wishing this change was that the dividends might be payable on the same days as hers were Under the circumstances hereinbefore appearing and at the Plaintiff's request and not otherwise I did on or about the 5th November 1866 invest the sum of £23,913 17*s.* 3*d.* as far as I can remember but the Plaintiff had the papers connected with the transaction aforesaid delivered to her immediately after it and has retained them ever since I never having seen them subsequently such sum being the whole of the purchase money arising from the sale of the Reduced Annuities aforesaid in which the said sum of £24,000 had been invested But I deny that such sum or any part thereof was obtained from the Plaintiff as in the said Bill mentioned Such new investment was in my own name and was in the sum of £26,756 15*s.* 5*d.* £3 per Cent. Consolidated Bank Annuities I do not know to what she alluded in the last letter but one in saying I wish my bankers had done the business for it was her own wish they should not and she did not even like the thought of having to go to be identified by them "till the job was done" She had not informed her banker Mr. Goode of Bridport and there was a good deal of difficulty when her dividends were due and Mr. Goode wrote to her saying he hoped she would inform him when she made any change in relation to her funds and that he would transact even for nothing the business for her rather than get into confusion in his accounts with her affairs The papers she alludes to are the communications she pretended she had received I took them to her and copied them in her pre-

Digitized by Microsoft®

sence in the book she had which I have before mentioned as containing the history of my adoption She read it and liked it and said it read so well particularly the part she had made up that it must be printed some day.

56. The Plaintiff now came almost daily to my rooms and I dined or breakfasted with her frequently I was most wonderfully disappointed in her general character I found a most fearful want of truth combined with a revengeful spirit and before I had known her a week I regretted having accepted her gift It was this alone which prevented me from taking publicly her name which she now daily urged me to do but she had changed her mind as to what it was to be and resolved that it was to be Daniel Lyon To this I objected in the most decided manner and told her it would look as if I were ashamed of my own name She said "Oh very well just as you please but the day will come when I shall have my say about it" She was as resolute in this as in everything she desired and I had so little influence over her that I even had to ask my friends to intercede with her for me on the point which they accordingly did as I shall prove At that time there were no spiritual communications given regarding any change of name or any business and indeed we but rarely had any spiritual manifestations certainly not more than two or three times when we were alone together The witnesses who were present on the other occasions will prove that if there was any fraud whatever practised it was the Plaintiff alone who practised it I do not allege that on any occasion a manifestation of the spirit of the Plaintiff's deceased husband took place or that his or any spirit was placed in communication with the Plaintiff I make no allegation on the subject and I am willing to give the Plaintiff to the best of my power the names descriptions and addresses of all and every persons and person present at any interview between the Plaintiff and myself if she will specify the occasion.

57. She used to say she had visions and extraordinary

Digitized by Microsoft®

manifestations and I used to credit her With all her peculiarities she was sometimes so kind and thoughtful to me personally and expressed such regret occasionally for her temper that I at last decided I would sacrifice my life to her and what finally decided my so doing was the interest she took in my family She arranged the sums I was to allow them yearly including my sister who had been living under the gracious protection of the Empress of the French for the last nine years About a week after I had written to my family at her request she suggested I should not give quite so much although in fact it was my own property I was thus disposing of no part of the allowance being to come from her.

58. About a week after my return from Malvern and I think on the 8th November 1866 the Plaintiff said to me "Who is your legal man?" I told her as the fact was that I had no legal man as I had no law business to transact and that the only legal man I knew well was Mr. William Martin Wilkinson She asked me if he was an honest man and I told her truly that I had never heard any one question his honesty She asked me for his address and I gave it her.

59. She then asked me the address of my friend who had been introduced to her by me the day I returned from Malvern namely the 1st November and I gave her the address of Mr. Rudall She wrote these addresses down on a slip of paper and took them to a side table and taking up a card came back and wrote on the same bit of paper what was on the card I asked why she was copying a card and she said "This is the address of your friend Dr. Hawksley and I am going to transact some important business and I want the three addresses handy when I write I want most particularly a medical man for I wish in case of necessity he should be able to swear to not only my sanity but general business habits and clear judgment and memory" She then asked me the names of my father and mother I gave her all then and as I was leaving her

Digitized by Microsoft®

that evening she said "Now to-morrow I am going to be very much occupied in the morning so do not come to see me She said I think to-morrow is the 9th you had better go and see the Lord Mayor's Show and tell me all about it any way do not come here till the evening." I did not then know for what purpose she had asked these names and addresses nor had any spiritual communication been given nor had I sought to influence her in any way.

60. On the morning of the 9th I went to Dr. Hawksley and he found it necessary to have me submit to an operation of no great importance but causing inconvenience and pain I did not to the best of my belief mention to him that he would hear from Mrs. Lyon but on Monday the 12th when I had to see him again professionally he mentioned having heard from her. On leaving Dr. Hawksley on the 9th though I was in pain yet as I had promised the Plaintiff to tell her about the Show I went to Charing Cross but was so faint and ill I could not stay so I went to Mr. Wilkinson's office and gave orders my old Will should be destroyed.

61. Mr. Wilkinson did not mention having heard from Mrs. Lyon I did not tell him she was about to make a Will I could not have done so for I did not know it myself. I did not on that or any other occasion give any instructions whatever to the said Defendant William Martin Wilkinson concerning the Plaintiff or her business or even allude to it In fact I knew nothing about it as she always kept her business matters secret from me and even derided my ignorance of business He never told me nor did I suggest to him on that or on any other occasion that he should ask her certain questions or that she must be prepared to answer nor did I then or at any time say so to the Plaintiff or say that Mr. Wilkinson's letters to her would be written cautiously or anything whatever about his letters to her or hers to him The Plaintiff's allegation to that effect in the ninth paragraph of her said affidavit is like the rest of it infamously false as will be proved

Digitized by Microsoft®

62. The Plaintiff was exceedingly pleased with Mr. Wilkinson and said he had put her so much on her guard that one would think he was more her friend than mine I crave leave to refer to the whole of the Answer of the Defendant Wilkinson filed in this cause filed on the 20th July 1867.

63. The only thing I have any remembrance of ever hearing Mr. Wilkinson say to me on the subject was that it was a pity the Plaintiff would not do something for her husband's family or be more generous to public charities not showering all her munificence on me and to this I have replied as I have to all my friends that I had no influence to stop her in anything she undertook and that I myself intended as I in fact did in case her property came to me to share it with her husband's relatives for I ever thought and said both to her and to others that it was most unjust that a part of the property at least should not go back to where it came from though I felt and said that I had as good a right to it as the comparative strangers to whom she had left it in some of her Wills.

64. On the evening of the 9th November 1866 I saw her for a very short time I remember it because she gave me on going in a fruit of prickly pear saying however that it was very dear sixpence I think. She told me she had written some most important letters concerning myself but that she must not tell me the contents I was in great pain and left very early that evening The accusation that I dictated to her the instructions for a Will as she alleges in her said affidavit or the letters of invitation to these gentlemen is wholly without a shadow of truth I was not in the house when the letters were written nor did I know their contents till this suit was begun nor was any spiritual communication whatever given on the subject nor did I seek to influence her in any way whatever nor had I any power over her.

65. I never dictated or wrote or gave instructions for or suggested to her in any way whatever any one of

Digitized by Microsoft®

the business letters written by her to the Defendant Wilkinson set forth in his Answer and to which I crave leave to refer nor did I know the contents of any one of them until after this suit was commenced I am not a man of business knowledge as my friends will prove and I do not believe I could have written such letters had I wished to do so In fact I do not understand the meaning of some of them.

66. The Will itself which is set forth in the 3rd paragraph of the Defendant Wilkinson's Answer and to which I crave leave to refer bears internal evidence that I did not dictate it as the Plaintiff untruthfully swears In the first place she is determined to make me drop the name of Home which I had always objected to do and in the next place I knew she had no right to armorial bearings without a bar sinister.

67. Save and except as hereinbefore appears the Plaintiff did not to the best of my remembrance and belief shortly after the said sum of £24,000 was given to me by her in manner aforesaid for I deny that it had been obtained by me from the Plaintiff by the means or under the circumstances in her Bill alleged in fact have another meeting or interview with me I deny that I did at such meeting or interview allege or represent to the Plaintiff or induce her to believe or to the best of my knowledge and belief that she did believe that she was required by the spirit of her deceased husband to destroy the Will she had then made or to make another Will in favour of me or that I then made any allegation or representation to the Plaintiff on the subject or that I represented to the Plaintiff or induced her to believe or that she did as far as I know believe that the spirit of her said husband dictated the terms of such new Will under which I was to be the universal legatee of all the Plaintiff's property or that Dr. Hawksley and Mr. Rudall or either of them (in the said Bill respectively named) were to be sent for to attest the execution of such new Will or that the spirit of the Plaintiff's

Digitized by Microsoft®

said late husband dictated the terms of the letters to be written to the said Dr. Hawksley and Mr. Rudall or either of them asking them to attest the said Will or that I made any allegations or representations then to the Plaintiff on the subject The said Dr. Hawksley and Mr. Rudall were and are friends of mine I deny that a Will purporting to be the Will of the Plaintiff was accordingly or in fact prepared by or for me The Plaintiff did as she afterwards informed me cause a Will to be prepared by the Defendant Wilkinson without any knowledge or suggestion of mine under which but not under such a Will as is referred to in the Plaintiff's Interrogatories as having been prepared for me I was named as the universal legatee of all the Plaintiff's property and such Will as I have alleged was as she afterwards informed me executed by the Plaintiff on or about the 12th of November 1866 in the presence of and attested by the said Dr. Thomas Hawksley of 70 Brook Street Hanover Square an eminent physician Mr. Henry Alexander Rudall of 8 and 9 Great Tower Street London a merchant of good standing and the Defendant William Martin Wilkinson all three being as I fully believe men of irreproachable character I deny that the said Will was in fact executed by the Plaintiff at my instigation suggestion or desire or was so executed while as the Plaintiff now pretends she was under the influence of the ascendancy and power which she alleges I had acquired over her mind by the means and under the circumstances in her said Bill stated and I shall make out the contrary by proving that I never had any such influence ascendancy or power over her.

68. I had told her that my presence might be required in Russia relative to my law suit. This and the idea that I should ever marry again were now the two reigning ones in her mind for she used to say "you would neglect the old woman for the young one" Then she used to talk to me and to my friends about our future arrangements The house was to be taken in my name and I was to pay the

Digitized by Microsoft®

rent out of my income We were to have two carriages I was to keep my own servant we were to have a house at the sea-side she was to pay for the servants One of the carriages was to be a landau and for her sole use The sea-side house was where we were to go with some literary friends or some persons of note to enjoy their society.

69. On the 12th of November in the afternoon the Plaintiff went into her bedroom and brought out what seemed to be a document of some kind and said "Do you see this? Well look well at it for it will soon be smoke and ashes It is my Will and I have made many of them but I shall make no more" and she then burnt it I say that I neither used any inducement or control over nor made any representation whatever to the Plaintiff on the subject nor induced her to believe that the spirit of the late Charles Lyon requested or desired the Plaintiff to destroy the former Will or make and substitute another in its place nor did I ever see her new Will nor in fact have I ever known its contents before the commencement of this suit further than that she had told me generally it was in my favour.

70. I made no effort or attempt whatever to keep her from her husband's relatives or any friends or connections that she might have but on the contrary desired her to see them which she did and often in my absence as I arranged and wished it to be On the 13th November 1866 the day after the signing of the Will she wrote and sent me the following note:—

"½-past 12 o'clock.

"My dear Daniel,—I have this moment received a note from my niece to tell me she has been prevented coming to see us this morning but will come to-morrow afternoon so I shall expect you dear as usual.

"Your affectionate mother,

"JANE LYON."

The niece mentioned in this note was Mrs. Tom Fellowes one of her husband's relatives. Mrs. Lyon used after

Digitized by Microsoft®

this to tell me "That horrid Plessy" (meaning the said Mrs. Tom Fellowes) "tries all she can to put me against you and yet she will not succeed Why she even said it would make people talk if we were to live in the same house together To which I replied evil to them that evil think and they must be bad-minded people to think of such a thing."

71. One evening while we were at dinner she said she felt a spirit by her chair This was in the presence of the said Mrs. Tom Fellowes and as soon as she was gone she laughed and told me it was all made up on her part to astonish her niece.

72. On Mrs. Fellowes leaving London the Plaintiff told me that she had given £50 to her and since then I have never seen her open her cheque book but what she would say "I wish I had it back again."

73. One morning about the 10th November 1866 the Plaintiff showed me the photograph of a little boy and asked me if I did not think it like my son I told her that I could not see that it was in the least She said Mrs. Sims had brought it saying that the spirits must have made the photograph for she—Mrs. Sims—did not know such a child I said I had no belief in any such thing and that if the spirits had sent it they might have made it less vulgar looking A day or two after this Mrs. Tom Fellowes asked me for the portrait of my child and Mrs. Lyon jumped up and said "Oh I have one of him I will give it you" I was too much under obligations to her to expose her untruthfulness and therefore did not contradict it and Mrs. Fellowes took the said portrait and so far as I know has it now I give these details in order that I may be contradicted if my statements are false.

74. A similar act of duplicity on her part took place in the month of January 1867 An American lady gave me what is known as a Ferotype of herself Mrs. Lyon said the upper part of the head was like hers and she put ink on the lower part of the face and showed it as a spiritual

Digitized by Microsoft®

production and even dictated to me a communication to give an air of fact to the same.

76. The Plaintiff now used to come to my rooms at any hour and she came nearly every day On Wednesday the 21st November 1866 she wrote and sent to me the following letter :—

"Wednesday Morn.

"My dear Daniel,—I shall expect you at seven this evening as usual. I am going to be engaged to-day therefore do not expect me I write in haste that you may get this in time not to keep you in the house and am

"Your affectionate mother,

"J. LYON."

I introduced her to my friends and took her into their society and went with her to dine and spend the evening with them and she was very proud of being introduced to them.

77. When she wished to leave Westbourne-place a step which I had long requested her to take for I wished her to have such rooms as I could bring my friends to she one day took me to look at some inferior apartments where she had lodged five years This was 17a Albert-terrace a house kept by the said Mrs. Pepper hereinbefore mentioned as one of her friends notwithstanding her being as she said "a bad woman who had driven her daughter to all sorts of extremities and when she married a valet would not see her and when on her death-bed she sent to see her mother the answer returned by Mrs. Pepper was that she would see her 'in her coffin'" I did all I could to persuade her not to reside with such a woman whose apartments were even worse than the others But so little was my influence over her that she actually took the said apartments and used to say that she liked to be able when "she and Mrs. Pepper had their tiffs to throw Louisa in her teeth" She has from that time continued to reside in the said apartments for which she pays

Digitized by Microsoft®

30*s*. a-week out of the season and two guineas during the season.

78. One morning in November and shortly after the Plaintiff had been to look at her old apartments in Albert-terrace the said Mrs. Pepper came to see me in my rooms in Sloane street professing a great interest in me and wishing to know if the old lady had done in a legal way what she had done for she said "If it is not so done in a short time she will change her mind Why she is always changing her Will Once she told me when my daughter was alive that she had put her in her Will so once when she was dead and Mrs. Lyon was changing her Will I went to her and said Joe (that's my son sir) was his sister's favorite brother and as she is dead why could not you put him in your Will but law sir she was in such a rage with me Oh she is a hard-headed and as hard-hearted an old one." I expressed my displeasure at a lodging house keeper or indeed any one speaking thus of a person who was kind to me She then said "Oh you are not the first person she has adopted there is such a fine young woman named Fanny Hemming whom Mrs. Lyon adopted even as a baby and she just took her up and put her down as suited her fancy When she came to me she decided to take her to live with her but she would not go to the expense to have an extra room and so wished the young woman to sleep with her Mrs. Hemming refused to give her daughter up to Mrs. Lyon and told her that if the father did give his child to her the father was dead and she would not allow her daughter to live with such a woman.

79. The Plaintiff afterwards told me that excepting the abuse of herself the whole of the above statement of Mrs. Pepper was true and the Plaintiff also told me she had ascertained that Miss Hemming had been to her friend who sells mixed sweets and said that she Mrs. Lyon was a bad woman who did not believe in God The Plaintiff also told me and I charge it to be the fact that

Digitized by Microsoft®

she had adopted other children but grew weary of them but she said she would not do so of me.

80. A few mornings after this I had a call from Mrs. Pepper before I was out of bed requesting me to lend her £200 I could not do it and told her so She came many times about it and each time for a less sum till it was £15 I told her (as the fact was) that the Plaintiff had made me promise not to sell out the stock she had given me without first informing her of it and getting her consent and that she (Mrs. Pepper) had better show the Plaintiff the letter which she exhibited to me from a man connected with Tattersall's threatening to post her son and then I would use all the influence I had to get it for her Mrs. Pepper came into the Plaintiff's room that morning to clear away the breakfast things and bursting into tears said "Oh Mrs. Lyon you might have saved Louisa but you did not and have regretted it save her brother now" She left the letter and the Plaintiff gave me a good scolding because I said a few words in favor of the young man observing that she never allowed anyone not even her father nor her husband to interfere with her in matters of business which she always arranged for both of them.

81. The Plaintiff refused to give or allow me to give the required assistance and from that day Mrs. Pepper became my enemy and the Plaintiff who is rather fond of going to the kitchen used to come up foaming with rage and saying "That beast Pepper will call you Home though I always tell her it is Lyon."

82. To the best of my belief it was Saturday the 24th of November the Plaintiff went to reside at Albert-terrace Miss Peel had the first floor and the Plaintiff the second. * * *

83. I have during the months I was with the Plaintiff never known her to keep to the one idea so long as to the change of my name And at last for she was again determined it should only be Daniel Lyon I had my friends

Digitized by Microsoft®

write to me and I showed her the letters requesting me to keep the name of Home at least I had three card plates engraved to please her for she changed so often One was D. D. Home Lyon one D. D. H. Lyon and the last D. H. Lyon At last she said we must ask the spirits on this occasion I said I not only did not wish so to do but would not do it The Plaintiff said my friends would think her so whimsical about my name that we must do something to avoid this.

84. One evening while we were seated together she bade me take paper and pencil and write and she would dictate The Plaintiff then dictated as if it were a message from some spirit who was related to me that the name of Home should be retained The Plaintiff said "This will look all right and your friends will not think me a whimsical old woman." The name of Home was accordingly retained and that of Lyon added to it.

85. Just previous to her leaving Westbourne-place one afternoon the servant brought up the card of a "Mrs. Bailey" The name was unknown to me and the Plaintiff said it was to her also but she asked her to be shown up then she recognized a lady whom she had known and to whom she introduced me as her adopted son I went away soon afterwards leaving her alone with the lady In the evening she told me that the said Mrs. Bailey was the wife of a lawyer in Sloane-street I asked her why she had not employed him instead of Mr. Wilkinson but she said she knew nothing of him further than that he had married this lady I on one or two occasions after this asked her why she did not employ Mr. Bailey but her usual answer was that Mr. Wilkinson was as true as steel and she wished for no other I swear that this was her expression and not mine I called with her on Mrs. Bailey I also called on Mrs. Sims and was very glad at all times to have the Plaintiff do what and see whom she pleased She was very angry because I would not go with her to see her friend named Prior who sells mixed sweets at

Digitized by Microsoft®

number 2 Park-side opposite Wilton-place but I did not see the necessity of so doing.

86. On the last day of November 1866 Mr. Wilkinson made a draft of the deed poll for my change of name and the Plaintiff saw and approved of it I executed it on the 3rd of December 1866 It bore date on that day and I executed it at the Plaintiff's request and at her request it was afterwards enrolled as of record in Her Majesty's Court of Chancery and I did thereby declare as the Plaintiff well knew that I had taken the name of Lyon in lieu of and in addition to that of Home and that in future I intended to be called and known as Daniel Home Lyon A true copy of such deed is set forth in the 6th paragraph of the Defendant Wilkinson's Answer to which I crave leave to refer On the evening of the same day the 3rd December 1866 the Plaintiff and I dined at the house of a friend of mine named Mr. Griffin of number 1 Palace-gardens Bayswater when we met several people to whom the Plaintiff announced that I had that day signed my name for the last time as Home I advertised my change of name and that I intended thereafter to call myself Daniel Home Lyon in the "Times" "Morning Post" and other papers at the Plaintiff's request.

87. On Sunday the 2nd December 1866 we called at the house of a friend of mine named Jencken residing at Kilmory House, Thicket Road, Norwood, a gentleman who was formerly called to the bar but is not now practising as I had told the Plaintiff When there she gave him in my presence the true narrative of her adoption of me as I have hereinbefore stated and afterwards asked him to go with her into another room alleging that she had some business to transact with him and then as I have since learnt and charge enquired of him how she could best settle the sum she had given me with any additions she might please to make in such a way that her husband's family could not after her death upset it or that even she herself could have no power over it and he then asked her

Digitized by Microsoft®

if spiritualism had anything to do with it or if I had in any way influenced her all which she then and there indignantly and emphatically denied but said she had wished for a son and that in him (meaning myself) she had found all she required and her only dread was lest he (meaning myself) should marry again He then advised her to see a medical man that the fact of her being in her right mind might not be disputed She told him that she had already had a physician as witness to her Will that in case of necessity he might not only prove that she was sane but a clever woman of business Mr. Jencken then advised her to execute a deed confirming the gift.

88. On Tuesday the 4th December 1866 Dr. Robert Chambers the Editor of Chambers' Edinburgh Journal called on me and I took him to call on the Plaintiff who was very proud of this as she was of being introduced to my other friends of distinction literary or otherwise And she has told many of them in my absence the story of my adoption as I have given it I allude particularly to Mrs. Nicholls whom she told on the 10th January 1867 as the fact was that she had to urge me to take her money and that spiritualism had nothing whatever to do with it She told Mr. Gerald Massey the Poet in January her delight at seeing my astonishment when she made her proposals her gifts being so unsought and unexpected She spoke to Mrs. Ritchie to the same effect in November 1866 and she told Mr. Perdicaris as early as the 14th October 1866 that she "would have done the same for me if I had not been a medium" and that she would "Rather see her money in the fire than that any of her relatives should have it" and "That what she had done for him" (this Defendant) "was not all that she intended doing" On or about the 13th Octobe. 1866 she told Mrs. S. C. Hall that she had given me this Defendant £24,000 which though she could add to she could not diminish as she wished me this Defendant to feel perfectly independent of herself On the 11th December 1866 she gave Miss

Digitized by Microsoft®

Houghton the true narrative of my adoption as I have given it above and said to her that she the Plaintiff had not given me this Defendant the sums of £24,000 and £6,000 "As a Spiritualist or in consideration of his" (this Defendant's) "medium powers but because she loved him" In February 1867 she told Mr. Dyne (as the fact was) that she had to urge me to take the money and she spoke to others to the like effect All the above statements with one exception were made by the Plaintiff in my absence and without my privity and many of them whilst I was away from her in the country.

89. On the afternoon of the 7th December 1866 I was unwell and went to my rooms before dinner I remember it because we were going to the house of a friend of mine the Right Hon. Elizabeth Lady Dunsany In the evening on my return to the Plaintiff she seemed elated at something and said "Such a singular thing has occurred in your absence" I asked her to what she alluded but she only said "It's a great secret and you are not to know" I knew the best way with her was to seem perfectly indifferent and she would tell me In the evening on our way out she said "You would be astonished if you knew what occurred to-day when you were out" Still she did not tell me that evening.

90. The following morning the 8th December 1866 at breakfast for I lived entirely with the Plaintiff and only slept at my rooms she said "Now Dan I dislike uneven sums" I fully expected the Plaintiff was going to request me to return to her four thousand pounds which I should then most certainly have done without any hesitation when to my astonishment she said "I am going to have a deed of gift made out and I am going to add six thousand to the sum already given" I told her I had already more than enough and did not wish for more In fact I had so often seriously thought of returning what I had that I did not relish the new obligation.

91. She said it would be burdened however with the

Digitized by Microsoft®

condition that I should defray out of the dividends or interest derivable from the same the outgoings we might incur in wines sweets and fruits and travelling expenses.

92. I have since learnt for I knew nothing about it at the time and I charge that the Plaintiff on the 7th December 1866 wrote and sent to the Defendant Wilkinson the letter bearing that date set forth in the 8th paragraph of his Answer to which I crave leave to refer in which she says "On the occasion of my adopted son taking the name of Lyon I wish to give him a little surprise" and requests him to prepare a deed thoroughly legal and that she also wrote unknown to me on the same day a letter to the said stock brokers Messieurs Fox, Taylor and Company which is as follows:—

"17a, Albert Terrace,
"Albert Gate, Hyde Park,
"7th December, 1866.

"Gentlemen,—You will have the goodness to transfer consols standing in my name Jane Lyon of Bridport Dorset Widow to the amount of Six thousand pounds cash to the account of my adopted son D.D. Home or Daniel Home Lyon as is now his legal name I will call on Monday at One o'clock to sign the transfer.

"I am, Gentlemen, your most obedt.,
"JANE LYON."

93. On the 10th December 1866 I at the Plaintiff's request accompanied her to the Bank when she in order to carry out her said intention voluntarily and against my desire transferred to me the further sum of (I believe) £6,798 17*s.* 4*d.* £3 per Cent. Consolidated Bank Annuities into my old name of Daniel Dunglass Home that being the name in which her original gift was then standing On this occasion she discussed with the brokers I taking no part in the conversation whether the transfer should be made in my new or original name They decided in favour of the latter The Plaintiff took the papers relating to the said new gift away with her and I have never seen them

Digitized by Microsoft®

It is a new invention of hers and entirely false that anything whatever with respect to this new gift was rapped out or that she thought the spirit of her husband induced her to do such a thing as to give me the money as a birthday present my birthday being in fact on the 20th March.

94. In answer to the Plaintiff's Interrogatory I deny that the Plaintiff on the 10th December 1866 or at any other time was at my request or suggestion or while under the alleged influence of the ascendancy and power which the Plaintiff now alleges that I had by the means in the said Bill mentioned or in fact acquired over her mind or by any other means induced by me to go again or in fact with me to the Bank of England or to transfer the sum of £6,798 17*s.* 4*d.* or any other sum of £3 per Cent. Consolidated Bank Annuities in my name as Daniel Dunglass Home and I make out the contrary in manner hereinbefore appearing I believe that the sum of bank annuities voluntarily transferred into my name by the Plaintiff as I have hereinbefore truly stated and not otherwise was equivalent in value to a sum of £6,000 sterling.

95. On the 11th December 1866 I was in the house when the draft of the deed of gift came to the Plaintiff and she opened it and began reading it to herself She had not done so more than a few minutes when she called out in a very angry tone "Daniel bring me pen and ink at once I wonder if Wilkinson is a fool or if he thinks me one" I handed her pen and ink as she desired and she drew her pen across some words and then wrote something in the margin She said "Look at this line 'And all my husband's family and connexions are well provided for' Why they may bring in some street-sweeper and say he was a connexion Even Mrs. James Fellowes could claim under that clause for her boys are not well provided for" (She gave reasons why they were not well provided for but as they are most injurious to the family I omit them) She shewed me what she had written on the margin "Jane

Digitized by Microsoft®

Lyon I have drawn my pen over this I do not approve of such" I said "Well mother I only wish you did not feel as you do against the family" She drew me towards her in a way which made me angry saying "You are my family" I left the room She ran after me bidding me to send her Mr. Phillips my secretary I did so and later in the day he told me as the fact was that Mrs. Lyon had sent him with some documents and a letter to Mr. Wilkinson I only saw the Plaintiff in the afternoon in the presence of my friends at my own rooms and no allusion was made to the deed or anything else And I did not know what was in her said letter of the 11th December 1866 which is set forth in the 10th paragraph of the Defendant Wilkinson's Answer.

96. The next evening the 12th of December I came in with my little boy and found Mr. Wilkinson with the Plaintiff She said she had not terminated her business with Mr. Wilkinson and sent me and my boy into her bed room When we returned she showed my boy the parchment she had executed being the deed of gift and he remembers it well for she kissed him and told him that "There was his fortune when his father died" No influence of mine was used to cause such deed to be made or executed nor was any spiritual communication given with respect to it nor did the Plaintiff think that the spirit of her husband dictated it It was to suit her own purposes and nought else She spoke to all my friends about it immediately afterwards in the most triumphant manner and her only surprise was that it was not in the papers The Plaintiff's deliberate assertion in the 12th paragraph of her said affidavit filed in this suit on the 27th June 1867 still more deliberately repeated in the 8th paragraph of her further affidavit filed on the 18th July 1867 that she did not execute this deed of gift on the 12th December nor till the time when she executed the mortgage deed of the 19th January 1867 is utterly untrue and will be as completely disproved as the rest of her assertions.

Digitized by Microsoft®

97. Under the circumstances hereinbefore appearing and not otherwise I believe that such deed poll or instrument in writing as in the said Bill is mentioned to bear date the 12th December 1866 and therein stated to be of or to the purport and effect in the 11th paragraph of the said Bill set forth (so far as the same is therein set forth) was duly executed by the Plaintiff.

98. The said deed poll was prepared by the Defendant William Martin Wilkinson but not as the Solicitor for and on my behalf but as the Solicitor employed by and acting for and on behalf of the Plaintiff I gave no instructions or suggestions whatever to the said Defendant Wilkinson on the subject of the said deed poll I have been informed and believe that the costs for the same have lately been paid by the Plaintiff without prejudice It is untrue that such deed poll or any other deed or instrument whatever was executed by the Plaintiff at my request or instigation suggestion or desire or while under the alleged influence of the ascendancy and power which the Plaintiff now pretends I had acquired over her as in the said Bill mentioned and I make out the contrary in manner herein appearing I have been informed by the said Defendant Wilkinson and I believe that the Plaintiff was repeatedly requested by him to employ some other Solicitor and that she persistently refused to do so and I crave leave to refer to the correspondence between the said Defendant and the Plaintiff set forth in the said Defendant's Answer And save her aforesaid application to Mr. Jencken unknown to me and his advice I am unable to set forth as to my belief or otherwise whether such deed was executed by the Plaintiff without the intervention of any or if any what other independent or other Solicitor or person for or on her behalf Both the said Defendant Wilkinson and the said Mr. Jencken acted entirely independently of me and of each other in the transaction aforesaid.

99. The Plaintiff had told me some weeks previous to the 12th December 1866 that she wished Mr. Wilkinson

Digitized by Microsoft®

to find a mortgage for Thirty thousand pounds for she said " I shall put out Sixty thousand at 5 per cent. and that will make my income quite as good as it was" I did as she requested and heard no more of the affair till about Christmas time when I saw her receive a letter which I knew to be in Mr. Wilkinson's handwriting I asked her what it was about and she said " it was none of my business but that I should know when the time came."

100. On the 30th of December 1866 we spent the day and evening at the house of Mrs. Henning a friend of mine residing at Sunninghill House Thicket Road Norwood and so absurdly affectionate was the Plaintiff towards me and so much did she talk of her great fear that I should marry and leave her that this lady has since told me as the fact was that she determined never to ask her again to her house inasmuch as even the servants had made remarks upon her conduct.

101. This was the day of the burning of the Crystal Palace and the Plaintiff was for a long time in a room without any fire in it watching the conflagration and she took a most severe cold from which she did not recover all the winter From the fact that the Plaintiff had taken cold and was feverish and ill I remember distinctly the 31st of December and I also remember her sending me to post a letter for Mr. Wilkinson the contents of which I was entirely ignorant of.

102. The Plaintiff was feverish and ill and for the only time since I had known her she was on the sofa almost all the evening of the 31st December I sat by her and she then told me that she was about to transact or had transacted some very important business which greatly concerned me She told me that the letter I had posted for Mr. Wilkinson was respecting a mortgage for me As she had for some time been speaking of my putting my money out on mortgage for she never considered me capable of transacting business I thought she referred to my own money being placed out on mortgage and that

Digitized by Microsoft®

she had found a good investment for me through Mr. Wilkinson so I thanked her and begged she would not worry herself about it at least while she was ill She then told me that it was a mortgage of her own money which she had decided to have in my name reserving only a life interest for herself and that her husband had made over his property to her during his life I told her I did not see the necessity of such a step but she silenced me by saying "My first deed of gift might at a push perhaps be upset for my love for you was such a sudden thing that people may say I acted without due judgment but this is an affair of more mature consideration" and she added "my letters to you will prove the affection I have and all your friends will testify to my solicitude for your welfare You have taken my name I am happy with you and it is no one's business what I do with my money" Under such circumstances I could but be quiet and allow her to do as she wished.

103. I did not see one of the letters written by her at this time nor did I know their contents till this suit began It was through no belief in the spirit of her husband or any other spirit that she acted She was determined to have her own way in everything.

104. She was very angry with me in the early part of January because I had asked her why she would live in so wretched a way doing no good to any one She said it was ungrateful in me to talk as I did I told her it was for her own present and future happiness I reminded her as the fact was that I had obeyed her in everything That she had at the first exacted a promise from me that I would never sell out any stock without first informing her and she had promised to pay some small debts I had And not only did she now refuse to pay these but placed me in a false position in not allowing me to sell out the two or three hundred pounds which would have done it and that she would not allow me to be kind to the poor That in short I was a mere toy for her and was heartily

Digitized by Microsoft®

ashamed of myself She declared she would not sign the trust deed I told her I was glad of it for I felt my own degradation more and more every day She was ill and she began to cry I told her what I had said had not been meant in anger but that my illness made me irritable and Dr. Gully on the 10th January had found me so ill that he wondered I did not go abroad And I would not do so without her for I felt I had no right to be enjoying myself while she was ill and alone There was nothing more said at the time about the trust deed but a few days later she changed her mind apparently for she told me she was going to give me another surprise and that after due consideration she had resolved to carry out her first intention and that all was arranged.

105. On the 19th January 1867 I was with her as usual and Mr. W. J. Wilkinson and Mr. Hartley clerks of Mr. Wilkinson came having with them the deeds and copies I rose to leave the room knowing that the Plaintiff did not like to have me know anything about her business She called me back and I resumed my seat by the fire but she afterwards called me to her and kicking a foot-stool from under the table pointed for me to kneel there I did so close to her and she put her left arm round my neck and fondled my cheek while they were reading the parchments I was mortified at her so doing and when they were so reading the parchments I tried to draw away but the Plaintiff held me there She followed the reading of the deeds with great caution and stopped them once or twice to make such remarks as "A most clever deed" "Quite right" I neither urged her nor did I touch her as she now swears otherwise than the nearness with which she made me kneel would necessitate Under the circumstances hereinbefore appearing the Plaintiff was not in the month of January 1867 or at any other time induced by me to execute though she did in fact execute a deed purporting to be an indenture bearing date the 19th January 1867 and made between the parties and of or to the pur-

Digitized by Microsoft®

port and effect in the 13th paragraph of the said Bill set forth (so far as the same is therein set forth) and she was not induced by me to execute any other indenture of such or any other date or made between the same or any other parties or of or to such or the like or any other purport or effect than is hereinbefore stated The indenture of the 19th January 1867 which is hereinbefore stated to have been executed by the Plaintiff on that day was prepared by the Defendant William Martin Wilkinson as the solicitor for and on behalf of the Plaintiff and not of me this Defendant and I have been informed and believe that the costs for the preparation of the same have lately been paid by the Plaintiff without prejudice The said Defendant William Martin Wilkinson acted in that transaction and throughout all his transactions concerning the Plaintiff's business in entire independence of me And save as aforesaid I am unable to set forth whether the said indenture was seen or approved of by any other independent or other solicitor or person for or on behalf of the Plaintiff The Plaintiff also executed the indenture of even date recited in the said last-mentioned indenture whereby she assigned the principal sum of £30,000 and interest and the securities for the same to the said Defendant William Martin Wilkinson and I believe that such indenture of even date was prepared by the Defendant William Martin Wilkinson as the solicitor for and on behalf of the Plaintiff and not me this Defendant And the said Defendant William Martin Wilkinson acted independently of me as hereinbefore mentioned And save as aforesaid I am unable to set forth whether the same indenture was seen or approved of by any and if any what other independent or other solicitor or person for or on behalf of the Plaintiff And I deny that the Plaintiff executed the said two last-mentioned indentures or either of them at my request or instigation or while she was under the alleged influence of the ascendancy and power over her mind which the Plaintiff now pretends that I had acquired by the means

Digitized by Microsoft®

and under the circumstances in the said Bill mentioned and I make out the contrary in manner hereinbefore appearing The said two last-mentioned deeds were executed by the Plaintiff on the 19th January 1867 in the afternoon at her own lodgings 17A Albert Terrace Knightsbridge in the presence of Mr. William J. Wilkinson Mr. Hartley and myself and they were the only deeds then executed by her.

106. A day or two after this I was so much worse that Dr. Hawkesley wished me to try change of air and as I did not dare to ask such a favour my friend Mr. Rudall asked the Plaintiff's permission for me and she consented I wished her to go with me urging her bad cold but she would not do so and would not see a medical man.

107. I went to Hastings about the 26th January 1867 apart from the Plaintiff who remained in London and I did not return to town till the 13th February 1867 Up to the time I left London the only sources of difference between the Plaintiff and myself so far as I know were her parsimonious habits and her embarrassing display of affection towards me both when alone and when in the presence of my friends who made remarks upon it I had introduced her to most of my friends including many persons of rank and distinction who treated her with much attention as my adopted mother After I left town in January as aforesaid the majority of them discontinued their visits to her There was however one great exception I had introduced to her in November Mr. Henry Gould Gibson of No. 33 Mark-lane wine merchant He began from the very first to pay marked attention to the Plaintiff Even before I left town he used to bring her frequent presents of such articles as Hungarian bread sardines vinegar and so forth After I went away he visited her almost daily to the best of my information and belief And on at least one such occasion as will be proved he was heard to suggest to the Plaintiff that it was a pity she had adopted me He also as I am informed and believe was with the Plaintiff present at a *séance* of a true or pretended medium named Miss Nicholls held at the

Digitized by Microsoft®

Plaintiff's lodgings early in February 1867 The said Mr. Henry Gould Gibson as I am also informed and believe has continued on very intimate terms with the Plaintiff ever since and has been and is still in the habit of attending *séances* of other true or pretended mediums with the Plaintiff notwithstanding that she now pretends to have renounced her belief in Spiritualism I am further informed and believe that the said Mr. Henry Gould Gibson has been mainly instrumental in the institution of this suit After my departure for Hastings the Plaintiff's illness and comparative solitude and her resentment at my having discouraged her advances enabled Mrs. Pepper to gratify her feelings of revenge and envy towards me by irritating the Plaintiff against my little boy and myself She persuaded the Plaintiff that my son was taught to look forward to her death which was entirely untrue And she suggested to the Plaintiff that it was a pity she should have tied herself to a dying man. The said Mrs. Pepper also advised the Plaintiff to re-adopt instead of me the said Fanny Hemming whom she had cast off The said Mrs. Pepper was also as I am informed and believe present at the aforesaid *séance* held in February 1867 and has also together with the said Mr. Henry Gould Gibson incited the Plaintiff to take these proceedings in Chancery against me.

108. Several letters passed between the Plaintiff and myself during my said absence I have not kept copies of mine but the originals are in the Plaintiff's possession unless she has destroyed them.

109. In a letter which she wrote and sent to me on the 28th January 1867 she says—"Enquire of the spirits *if you can* who's is the face they have given me now to look at instead of yours I will not describe it let the *spirits* do so if *they can* When I was looking at it they touched me on the leg it was a most *extraordinary face* like no one *I ever saw* I first saw your profile then it vanished and the full face of another looked at me Would it be——?"

Digitized by Microsoft®

110. On the 5th February 1867 she wrote and sent me a letter wrongly dated the 5th January 1867 in which the following passage occurred—"Poor Mr. Hall is very ill he has got erysephelas in his head if he does not get soon well it is most dreadful it will fly all over his body I trust he will shortly get well poor dear fellow and poor Mrs. Hall has also been ill but she has now got pretty well again Mr. Gibson dined with me yesterday off the turkey which kept quite well" The turkey aforesaid was one of the said Mr. Henry Gould Gibson's presents to the Plaintiff.

111. On Monday the 11th February 1867 she wrote and sent to me at Hastings the following letter:—

"17a, Albert Terrace, Albert Gate,
"11th Feb., 1867.

My Dear Daniel,—I am much gratified to find you are much better I have just had Mr. Wilkinson here and he says he would be glad if you would stay till next Saturday He will be with you on Thursday for a couple of days and then you can come up together and it will also do you good to stay till Saturday.

"I had Sacha here yesterday he came last Saturday I was not at home I think there is no occasion for Mrs. Richie to send him here not knowing whether I require him to come You know little boys are no amusement to me a little girl is different and they are only in the way when not required and am

"Dear Dan, your affectionate mother,
"Jane Lyon."

This was the first intimation I had of a dislike taken to my child. From this day she never even asked me or the friends with whom he was staying how he was and in April the last and only time she ever saw him afterwards she did not even kiss him After this she told me that Mrs. Pepper did so hate the child and that she had told the Plaintiff undoubtedly he was looking forward to her death that he might be rich.

Digitized by Microsoft®

112. I returned unexpectedly in the afternoon of Wednesday the 13th February 1867 and found the Plaintiff at my rooms in Sloane Street She had just returned from the stockbrokers and the Bank of England where she had been with Mr. Wilkinson to sell out stock belonging to her and partly to me in order to complete another mortgage transaction for £30,000 of which I knew nothing except only that she had asked me before I left town to lend her the amount requisite to make the sum even as she knew she had not enough of her own and to this I had gladly consented On going up to shake hands with her I saw her give a sly push to some papers which were near her on the table and she seemed confused but I could not tell why I saw that they were her previous letters to me and as after her departure I for the first time missed it I believe that she took away with her at least one on that occasion and then or on some other occasion another and that these missing letters were those mentioned in the 29th and 50th paragraphs of this my Answer.

113. The evening I arrived from Hastings namely the 13th February 1867 Mrs. Pepper came up and shook hands with me When she left the room the Plaintiff said "Well that is the most wonderful woman" She then told me that Mrs. Pepper had brought the said Fanny Hemming to see her and she added "I know well enough what it was for only to get her into your place I shall tell the old beast that I have had a communication from Fanny's father telling me I am not to take her" I implored of her not to do so The Plaintiff went on to say "Mrs. Pepper has been up here every day during your absence trying to put me against you and here she shakes hands with you."

114. I found the Plaintiff much changed She seemed to watch my every movement and I distinctly remember the following incident The Plaintiff used to keep her watch on a stand on her mantelpiece The girl had only

Digitized by Microsoft®

just left the room and I by chance looked at the watch and saw it was a quarter past twelve Almost immediately afterwards the Plaintiff said "Are you awake dear" I said I was and asked her what she meant She said "Oh you have just been in a long trance and you have told me all about yourself" I said "Indeed and how long have I been in a trance" She said "At least half an hour" I looked at the watch and saw it was just seventeen minutes past twelve and besides I had none of the peculiar faint and cold feelings which I have after having been in a trance I asked her what I had said She told me that I had acknowledged that I had no property or claims to any in Russia at all This was so absurdly false and irritating that I told her once more I should then and there cease to have anything more to do with her and that I had already for too long a time sold my soul to such a woman as she was She answered with a look of the fiercest anger "I *will take* it back when the time comes, I have ever warned you not to turn my love to hate for I will hunt you to the death and there is no insult I will not heap upon you You forget you are but a medium and I will say it was all by undue influence you got what you have from me I can pay those I please to give evidence for me and you and your brat may go to the devil When the woman who gave me birth lay on her death-bed and her husband came to say she wished to see me I said she might die like a dog by the way side and I would not move a finger to save her So beware." I was so horror stricken at this outburst that my mouth filled with blood, as I am subject to internal hæmorrhage and I was too ill even to go to my rooms I must have fainted for when I recovered consciousness the Plaintiff was sitting near me and seemed much alarmed She kissed me and begged me with the tears streaming down her cheeks to forgive her She told me that Mrs. Pepper had put her up to it and also that she had been much annoyed by Henry Gibson having been bothering her for

Digitized by Microsoft®

money but that I must not think anything more about what had passed.

115. After this she was "inspired" as she said "very frequently" and I now believe and charge that her so called inspirations which she dictated to me and made me write were artfully designed by her for the purpose of having me in her power I was so ill and weak at the time that for the sake of peace and quiet I used to write just what she wished.

116. From this time I grew afraid of the Plaintiff and shrank from being alone with her for she would taunt me one moment and be too loving the next and once or twice just before I left for Torquay she told me she had been going over and dating her inspirations and pretended communications.

117. On one occasion she said she would like to learn French and she requested me to write in French "Would you like to be President of the United States" I did so and was about to throw it in the fire when she had read it but to my surprise she put it into her pocket This is but one of the many scraps of paper she had in her possession of that kind.

118. I had as hereinbefore mentioned advanced and lent to the Plaintiff the sum requisite to make up the second sum of £30,000 of her own which she had put out on mortgage This had been done in the following manner I had when at Hastings in February executed a power of attorney to the brokers to sell out of my stock so much as would produce the sum of cash which she required as well as the further sum of £400 which I required for my own purposes The brokers accordingly as I have been informed and believe raised £3,403 6*s.* 4*d.* cash by the sale of £3,755 7*s.* 8*d.* consols standing in my name which was advanced to the Plaintiff and £400 cash by the sale of £441 7*s.* 7*d.* consols also standing in my name which was for myself She referred to this in her letter of the 13th February 1867 set forth in the 39th para-

Digitized by Microsoft®

graph of the Defendant Wilkinson's Answer to which I crave leave to refer wherein she says "If you have sold out from Daniel's let me have that paper of exact amount also. If you have not I would sell out the remainder of my stock as part and not have so much of his. J. L."

119. On the 21st February 1867 the Plaintiff took me with her to the said stockbrokers and to the Bank of England where she of her own accord and without even a request from me transferred the sum of £2,290 9*s.* 5*d.* Bank £3 per Cent. Consolidated Annuities which the brokers had told her were still standing in her name into my name as Daniel Dunglass Home that being the name in which the other consols were standing And this she did in part repayment of the sum of £3,755 7*s.* 8*d.* consols which she had borrowed of me as aforesaid leaving her still indebted to me in the sum of £1,464 18*s.* 3*d.* Bank £3 per Cent. Consolidated Annuities The Plaintiff took away with her and kept the papers relating to this sum of £2,290 9*s.* 5*d.* consols along with my other papers and I never saw them The Plaintiff charges in the 15th paragraph of her Bill of Complaint that she was induced by me to accompany me to the Bank of England and to transfer this sum of £2,290 9*s.* 5*d.* Bank £3 per Cent. Consolidated Annuities into my name as Daniel Dunglass Home And that this last mentioned transfer was also made by the Plaintiff while under the influence of the ascendancy and power which she alleges I had acquired over her and was then exercising by the means in the said Bill mentioned And she suppresses all mention of her having borrowed the said sum and more from me or from my stock a few days previously as aforesaid.

120. I deny that the Plaintiff was on the 21st February 1867 or at any other time again or in fact induced by me to accompany me to the Bank of England and transfer the sum of £2,290 9*s.* 5*d.* or some other and what sum of Bank £3 per Cent. Consolidated Annuities into my name as Daniel Dunglass Home and I make out the contrary in manner aforesaid and I deny that the last

Digitized by Microsoft®

mentioned transfer was also or in fact made by the Plaintiff while under the alleged influence of the ascendancy and power which the Plaintiff now pretends that I had by the means in the said Bill mentioned or in fact acquired or was then exercising over her mind and I shall make out the contrary by shewing that this charge is as utterly without foundation as the rest of her case.

121. I had been home but a few days from Hastings when the Plaintiff told me that Mrs. Pepper had got it out of her about making over the last mortgage deed to me and that Mrs. Pepper was in a great rage about it and had said fearful things about me and wondered she was not afraid I would kill her I again tried as I often had done to tell her that this intimacy with such a woman as she well knew Mrs. Pepper to be was unseemly but the Plaintiff used not only to have Mrs. Pepper sit with her during my absence but after I returned I used often to find the Plaintiff coming up from the kitchen She had taken a dislike to some of my friends and used to say most horrible things of them In short my life was a misery I could do nothing to please her She used to swear at me when I was so ill I scarcely knew what I was doing or where I was but I felt that I was bound to her and I had not then the moral courage to free myself I became so ill that again she seemed to pity me and before I left for Torquay which I did on or about the 10th March 1867 she was quite herself again She was most unfeeling at times and one evening when I was ill she said "She had made a pretty bargain in tying herself to a living corpse" and that she had been a fool in not doing as Mrs. Pepper advised "to adopt her son Joe."

122. The Plaintiff had in the months of January and February repeatedly desired me to invest £20,000 or £25,000 upon some mortgage security so as to increase my income which however she would never let me spend I was too ill to trouble myself about it and she herself spoke to Mr. Wilkinson and desired him to get a good mortgage security for me He accordingly procured a

Digitized by Microsoft®

mortgage and while I was ill at Torquay namely on the 13th March 1867 the brokers sold out for me a sum of £21,947 17*s.* 6*d.* Bank £3 per Cent. Consolidated Annuities part of the said sum of £26,756 15*s.* 5*d.* like annuities and £6,798 17*s.* 4*d.* like annuities less the sums of £3,755 7*s.* 8*d.* and £441 7*s.* 7*d.* like annuities so sold out as aforesaid but adding the sum of £2,290 9*s.* 5*d.* like annuities replaced as aforesaid The said Mr. Wilkinson received the proceeds of such sale amounting to £20,000 cash and on my behalf and in my name lent and advanced such last mentioned sum upon mortgage of property in Yorkshire and such sum of £20,000 has ever since been and is now invested on the security of the said mortgage The said security has since been and is now deposited in this Court where the Plaintiff can inspect it No part of the said sum so lent and advanced has been repaid.

123. I believe that a sum of £9,701 9*s.* 6*d.* and not a sum of £13,898 4*s.* 8*d.* Bank £3 per Cent. Consolidated Annuities being the residue or balance of the said three sums of £26,756 15*s.* 5*d.*, £6,798 17*s.* 4*d.* and £2,290 9*s.* 5*d.* like annuities after deducting from the aggregate amount thereof the said sums of £3,755 7*s.* 8*d.* like annuities lent and advanced to the Plaintiff as aforesaid and £441 7*s.* 7*d.* like annuities sold as aforesaid and also the further sum of £21,947 17*s.* 6*d.* sold out as aforesaid is still standing in my name as Daniel Dunglass Home in the books of the Governor and Company of the Bank of England I do not threaten but I intend to sell and dispose thereof or deal therewith when this suit is terminated as it in fact belongs to me.

124. During my absence from London several letters passed between us I have not kept copies of mine but the originals are still in the Plaintiff's possession unless she has destroyed them.

125. In a letter which she wrote and sent to me on the 17th March 1867 she says "I have had a letter from

Digitized by Microsoft®

dear cousin Lady Shelley She has been so very ill and has had rheumatic fevers and her adopted daughter Flossie has been extremely ill. She says tell Dan how very sorry we were not to have seen him in London Do pray write to her in a *few days* she says She never knew so very trying a winter" And further on "I am glad you like Torquay and have met with friends you like and that you enjoyed yourself yesterday in the sunshine I hope you will enjoy many such days when you are stronger and the weather finer Go to the Land's End and all the pretty places it will do you good to go about and make yourself acquainted with the beauties of the finest counties we have It is an excellent chance you have now and believe me my dear Daniel your affectionate mother

"JANE LYON."

I had known Lady Shelley since 1860 and in the latter part of November 1866 I introduced her to the Plaintiff when in the course of conversation it was discovered that their fathers were second or third cousins and that Lady Shelley had the same name as the Plaintiff and comparing notes they stated that they had both been from their childhood very wonderful mediums The Flossie alluded to is also a very wonderful medium In the month of February 1867 the Plaintiff told me when angry with me on one occasion that she intended to make a new Will in favour of her new found relatives Lady Shelley and her family To this I answered that she was quite welcome to do so as far as I was concerned but that as her money came principally from her husband I thought it would be just to give his relatives some of it This only increased her anger and she said "Not one farthing" In further proof of her spite against her husband's relatives and desire to display to them "her high folks" I insert an extract from a letter written by the Plaintiff to Mrs. Tom Fellowes on the 5th December 1866

"5th December.

"My dear Mrs. Fellowes,—Many thanks for your

Digitized by Microsoft®

kind letters I am very well The indisposition you allude to was very short indeed I send by this post 'The Spiritual Magazine' The article called 'The freed soul' was written by me and copied by my husband in 1826 You will see by this that I have not in the least changed my belief My health is very good and I go out to dine quite often I have been delighted to find Sir Percy Shelley's wife my cousin He is the only son of the poet and I shall hope to see a good deal of her Her name was Jane Gibson we were named after the same woman She is very desirous we should pay them a long visit in January and if we can so arrange it we will."

The Plaintiff had in fact I believe composed the article alluded to in the above letter in or before the year 1826 and in the month of November or December 1866 she without consulting me caused this article to be inserted in the "Spiritual Magazine" and was afterwards much vexed "that she had neglected to publish that the authoress was the mother of the celebrated D. D. Home."

126. On the 19th March 1867 she wrote and sent to me the following letter addressed to Torquay:—

"19th March, 1867.

"My dear Daniel,—You say your birth-day is the 20th *i. e.* to-morrow May you see many of them and may they be *happy* days *full* of *health* and *joy* Look forward to see my *words verified* for I write with the thought and pen of *inspiration* Your health will flourish like the *young bay tree* full of *life* and *sap* I will never see those far days but you will *remember* my *prophetic* prognostications herein I am glad you sleep well and your cough is much better You will all be well together *very soon think of that only* The weather here is most thoroughly miserable snowing one hour sleeting the next cold and comfortless we never see the color of the sky it is so black My cold no better no getting out no change for me the sooner I am off to the sunshine land *if such* the better You say that 50 miles from here the ground is covered with snow 2 and

Digitized by Microsoft®

3 feet thick but you do not say whether *east* or *west* This you will say in your next God bless and protect and restore you to *perfect health* and may your birthday of /68 be more auspicious and am my dear Daniel your very affectionate mother

"JANE LYON."

This is the last letter in which she signs herself mother In the 11th paragraph of her said affidavit filed on the 27th June 1867 the Plaintiff swears that in December 1866 I induced her to believe that the spirit of her deceased husband directed or wished her to give me a birthday present of £6,000 and that she accordingly did so on the 10th December 1866 in the manner therein mentioned although she had in a letter written to the Defendant Wilkinson on the 7th December 1866 without my privity or knowledge said "On the occasion of my adopted son taking the name of Lyon I wish to give him a little surprise I intend to add six thousand pounds to the twenty-four I have already given him making a sum total of thirty thousand."

127. During my absence at Torquay the Plaintiff notwithstanding the kind expressions in her letters towards me was endeavouring to fabricate evidence against me and she attempted to bribe amongst others as I shall prove Eliza Clymow the servant in Mrs. Pepper's lodgings to swear contrary to the truth that she had never posted any letters for the Plaintiff to Mr. Wilkinson and that she had heard me this Defendant dictate letters for the Plaintiff to write Finding that this poor girl's honesty was proof against her efforts the Plaintiff began to abuse her in her letters to me and on Tuesday the 2nd April 1867 the Plaintiff wrote and sent to me the following letter addressed to Plymouth :—

"Tuesday, 2nd April, /67.

"My dear Daniel,—I hope you like Plimoth and the Royal Hotel You must not come to London so soon as you say You must remain for two or three weeks longer

Digitized by Microsoft®

and go to Penzance they say it is equal to the South of France and no doubt it will do you good the change of air and you are so far on your road I wish you much to see it Miss Peal is there and this is some inducement for you to go I want to hear all about it and the beauties of Cornwall I think as your cough is a good deal better you may venture in a few days or a week's time and either stay there or return to Plimoth if you like it. I *do not wish* you *to come* to *this house* as I am going to quit I have been to No. 1 where you called once a Mrs. Loudon told me you said it was for a lady but you did not say who or she would have agreed to take me and she is very sorry she did not However she will take me as soon as I can leave I have said I would not stay if Eliza remained she is a very *bad slut* and *story teller* I think her *most* dangerous She is not any friend of yours or of mine but I do not mind that she can do us no harm and it will do you good to remain in the west until towards the latter end of this month and take great *care* of *yourself* and you will *soon* be WELL J. Fellowes is in the Royal Engineers but I do not wish you to court his acquaintance his mother and Charlotte Dennison was here I did not see them I did LOT wish to The latter is to be bridesmaid the marriage is to take place on the 7th of May Charlotte is on a visit to the intended at Plimoth Miss Hodges I mean to have my boxes away shortly but I hate to go to the house of Mrs. J. Fellowes to have them away but I will shortly I am quite well and to-day I have *began* to alter some clothes and things required and am

"Yours most affectionately,

"JANE LYON."

128. Although I have kept no copies of my letters to the Plaintiff I distinctly remember writing to her about this time and mentioning that I had heard there was a skeleton hand in the Roman Catholic Chapel belonging to the Gerrards near Warrington in Lancashire which was

Digitized by Microsoft®

reputed to possess miraculous powers of healing and that I thought of trying it She tried to take advantage of this in the following letters to entrap me into some sort of admission that we ought to follow implicitly whatever spirits may dictate I believe that she was incited to do this by the said Mr. Henry Gould Gibson who at this time visited her almost daily and he wrote at least one letter to make inquiries about me unknown to myself The said Mr. Henry Gould Gibson also wrote a letter to me dated 1st April 1867 in which he asked me to give him permission to ask the Plaintiff to lend him £500 at £10 per cent. interest wishing me to "drop a line" to Mrs. Lyon to inform her that he would do so I now believe and charge it to be the fact that the said Mr. Henry Gould Gibson of number 33 Mark-lane in the City of London wine merchant wrote this letter with the full knowledge and connivance of the Plaintiff for the purpose of inveigling me into some sort of implied admission that I had great influence over the Plaintiff and that she could not manage her own business affairs without me whereas in truth and in fact I should not have dared to write nor accordingly did I write any such request to the Plaintiff.

129. On the 4th April 1867 the Plaintiff wrote and sent me the following letter:—

"Thursday, 4th April, /67.

"My dear Daniel,—You would have a letter from me when you got to Plymouth You wish to know where James Fellowes is quartered it is at *Picklecombe Fort Devonport* I send you his photograph I do not dislike him I think him a very good young fellow I know nothing against him WHATEVER *I wish him well with all my heart* It is is mother I dislike she is a d——l out and out You astonish me respecting the hand If the spirits think it will do you good go in God's name if not stay where you are or go to Penzance Do the spirits communicate with you? For my part I shall let them go to sleep I never think of them or them of me Mr. Gibson

Digitized by Microsoft®

was here to-day is just left me He said he would write to you not to come to the ameture performance and am in haste yours affectionately,

"JANE LYON."

130. Again on the 7th April 1867 the Plaintiff wrote and sent me the following letter :—

"Sunday, 7th April, /67.

"My dear Daniel,—I hope you feel better for the change you have had so like a weathercock E. W. N. South You mean to try the spirit-hand no doubt I am still in the same quarters for a week or two longer but have had a quantum suf although I do not blame so much Mrs. Pepper as the good for nothing servant Would it not be better for you to go at once to France as you can now cross the Channel? No doubt it would do you good the change of air suits you I shall not quit London for some time yet and you would return in a month or two and pack up your things at the Athenæum for I do not think it will be carried on *much* longer Then probably I might go but 'tis quite uncertain as I think it will be better to leave well alone but I shall as usual go to the sea-side Mr. Harrison Green sent yesterday a lot of new laid eggs for you but they would not pay for the carriage to Liverpool I have a person working for me in my room and if you come to London *soon* to pack up your things previous to your going to Paris you can breakfast and dine at your lodgings or at Michell's and come to me at six o'clock You will then have the *day to yourself* and so shall I with my workwoman She goes at six o'clock you can then if you chose have tea a chop or steak with me Mr. Bernard the lame gentleman lives here and creates a great deal of additional work I wish I were out of it I fear poor Jencken is very ill I hope your are very *much better* although you may not be *quite* well I *sincerely believe* you *will* after you have been in France a time Then you may say I have been to France and I *am so well* that now I have learnt to dance I understand the

Digitized by Microsoft®

private theatricals went off well and *your boy Sacha* performed *wonders* that is a piece of *good news* for you viz. that your boy will be a star May you live to see him shine and am my dear Daniel your affectionately

"JANE LYON."

131. Again in another letter which she wrote to me about this time but which is merely dated Sunday night she says:—"Mr. Gibson was here last night."

132. Feeling at this time very unwell and depressed in spirits with an indistinct foreshadowing of the evil which was impending over me I wrote to her to that effect She answered it in a mode which from her reference to my boy whom I know she by this time hated was meant to be sarcastic.

"Thursday.

"My dear Daniel,—I am very sorry to hear that you feel yourself sometimes so depressed in thought You have no reason to be so Look forward to brighter days when you will as I told you in a former letter be quite well it will be so Look forward to see your son an ornament a shining star as I told you he will in all probability be He is your son the image of yourself in every way temper and disposition You must be proud of your son Take care of yourself for his sake that you may live to see him grow up."

133. On the 13th April 1867 the Plaintiff wrote and sent me the following letter:—

"17a Albert Terrace, Albert Gate,
"Hyde Park, 13th April, /67.
"Saturday.

"My dear Daniel,—I am indeed very sorry that you do not seem to get much better for the excursion and change of air You say that you are going to try the wonderful hand I do not think you will derive benefit therefrom I fear it is an imposture like many others However there is no proof like trial so you might regret you did not make that when you quit Liverpool so if you get no good a

Digitized by Microsoft®

trust in God you will get no harm but I think you should ask the spirits for their advice in the matter but that is too late and by this time you will know all about it They say the spirits are not to be relied upon at all times I wish you had gone to Penzance as I think Liverpool is far too cold for you however you should keep up your spirits There are better days in store for you as I know by TRUE inspiration that you will get better of this and be *quite* well it may be a *little* time first but you must be looking forward until that *good* time arrives patience and resignation A word to the wise you know may do a little good The weather here is very changeable it is to-day rainy cold and comfortless enough to drive one into the dolefuls I wonder if the spirit-land is any better if worse God help them that is there It is all to prove if we shall be able to do so If I had been the Great Giver of all good I think I should have given *all good* not one particle of evil no *pain* no *sickness* no *sorrow* no *death* no *dark gloomy* weather all *sunshine* and joy no *storms* at sea no shipwrecks all *calm* and beautiful all spiritual no mortality no flesh no decay the earth always beautiful growing spontaneously whatever we desire delicate fruits and ever shining flowers of exquisite beauty birds of the most splendid beauty ever singing *chattering* and amusing you in fact angels themselves no labour but that of tuning your instruments and cultivating your exquisite flowers and transporting yourself to ever varying endless scenes of beauty and variety music and angelic musicians ever varying their tunes sitting on banks of flowers Oh! could we be assured of that the sooner we are off the better Heigh for the spirit-land lay down the flesh and be off to the spirit-land lay down your bones and be off to the spirit-land I have no time to say more.

"In haste my dear Daniel yours affectionately

"JANE LYON."

134. I think this is the last letter I received before I returned to London which I did on the 22nd April 1867

Digitized by Microsoft®

and spent the evening with her I had written to Mr. Rudall to spend the evening with us for by this time I had a nervous dread of being alone with the Plaintiff who knew that for private reasons I had a horror of insanity which she took advantage of to awe me and have me still more under her control She used to feign in her conversation as she afterwards did in her letters a singularity of manners which had been up to this time or at any rate before February quite foreign to her.

135. On my return Mrs. Lyon openly evinced her dislike to me and her hatred of my child whom she would never even see She used also when we were alone to tell me she had me in her power and if I did not take care would make me feel it I was still in a feeble state of health and her manner so preyed upon my mind that I was soon much worse than when I returned and Dr. Gully told the Plaintiff that I was in a very dangerous way Then all of a sudden her former affection and kindness for a moment returned and one morning she came up saying "Oh that horrid Mrs. Pepper how she does hate you I dare say it is because you would not lend her the money she wanted She has just been saying that Mr. Verra had told her that I (the Plaintiff) was a fool to have given my money to a swindler like you but I told her that I had never made so good an investment." I left town on the 1st or 2nd May for Malvern.

136. Much correspondence passed again between us during my absence I have not kept copies of my letters but the originals are in the Plaintiff's possession unless she has destroyed them In the first letter which she wrote to me after my departure she said "Mr. Gibson was here last night enquiring after you I hope you will write two or three times a week just to let me know how you progress two or three times will suffice unless you have any subject to communicate to me as I do not always expect a *long* letter like the last but there is one thing do not forget to put day of month and residence."

Digitized by Microsoft®

137. On the 4th May 1867 she wrote me as follows:—

"Saturday, 4th May.

"My dear Daniel,—Please to return my blank cheques by *return* of *post* You have put me to great inconvenience by taking my cheque book instead of your own which is of *no use to me* whatever You know you got the *last* in my book to change I particularly wanted to make out a cheque to-day and found I *could not* as you had taken my book and left yours Be sure you at once return mine or as many as you have and I will immediately enclose yours in a *letter Take* off *the back* I will do the same by yours I cannot make a cheque until I get them In haste,

"Yours &c.

"JANE LYON.

"I hope you do feel better let me know Perhaps it will be as well to send three or four complete with the memorandum part I will do the same by yours *Do not use any more of mine* which are orders You recollect yours are blue—by bearer—and in no way proper for me Therefore use no more of them."

I had not even seen her cheque book and by this time would not have touched it for the world The cheque which she mentions my having cashed was for herself.

138. On the 7th May 1867 she wrote me as follows:—

"7th May, 1867.

"My dear Daniel,—I am sorry I wrote to you in such a pet respecting the cheque book I certainly was greatly annoyed to find I could not make out when I wanted one so very particularly I thought you had taken away mine instead of your own However I have been to the Bank to-day and had it changed for one as I usually have I know I wrote savagely I do not recollect what I said Destroy it You say you are getting stronger I am glad to hear it but you know you are to get better the spirit that you rely on says so therefore that is proof Your

Digitized by Microsoft®

sister-in-law has as you state gone to live again with her husband after a trial to divorce her He must be a poor wretch to live with her after knowing her so well but I suppose they are both alike *pot* and *kettle* But do not imagine you will ever get money from him to found promises upon an impossibility which you will never succeed to obtain until the moon is made of cheese and comes down upon earth to be eaten by men therefore be at *no expense* on that business for sooner will you get wings yourself and fly to him and *bite off his nose* This is quite as likely altho' they say cows may fly but very unlikely Mr. Hall called yesterday he and his wife goes to Paris Monday fortnight I expect company to spend the day to-morrow therefore I wrote to put off Mrs. Riche and your boy until you come home and he will like it quite as *well* and *better* I know Please present my regards to Dr. Gully and his sister Ellen your dear respected friend her sister if at home and believe me yours affectionately

"JANE LYON."

139. On the 13th May 1867 she wrote and sent to me a letter addressed to Malvern where I then was in which she says:—"I am heartily glad to hear you are so much better but have little doubt of your ultimate recovery or what would the spirits' word go for? We must bid goodby to them as they have always said you had a great work to perform on earth before you departed I wonder what it is Are you going to bring down the moon to earth to let us see what it is made of? Then we shall see what we shall see as the showman says With regard to the Russian money I am glad you are so sure of it All I can say I wish you may get it" and further on "My hopes are in *eternity* The spirits say I shall be blessed in this state They are not to be relied upon By the spirits I have been told many things that are far from being correct as yet."

140. Again on the 21st May 1867 she wrote and sent me the following letter:—

Digitized by Microsoft®

"Tuesday, 21st May.

"My dear Daniel,—By yours of this morning I am happy to find you are no worse also by a nice letter from your dear friend Miss E. Gully I had yesterday she gives me great hopes that you will soon be well again so to prove the spirits *true* who always say you will get quite well therefore do look forward and never dispond You are under the care of God and excellent good friends You are a most fortunate fellow you have been born under a fortunate planet You were in a bad way when you left London pale and sickly when you return you will not be rosey for that does not belong to you but health will I have no doubt be depicted on your countenance and many years' duration thereof."

She herself in her letter to me of the 19th March wherein she laid claim to inspiration had predicted that I would get quite well.

141. I had written to tell her that the doctors said I would be able to go to town in ten days and on the 27th May 1867 she wrote to me as follows:—

"Monday, 27 May, /67.

"My dear Daniel,—I am rather surprised to find that you are as you state viz. 'I am about *as I was*' that is to say the same as when I left London I am indeed very sorry for that you were much better However I still believe there is a time for all things that you will eventually get better probably never *quite* well but very different from what you are at present and the spirits say that you will be strong in *ten days* that will soon be up and then you will prove their power and veracity although I think they have not such powers The time is not come for them to display it however the great God's will must be done we all must succumb to that sooner or later and as the world goes there is not much worth living for and if we have not health there is nothing if robbed of life's great blessing we but drag on our weary way with pain distaste and sorrow but let us look forward into that mystery of mys-

Digitized by Microsoft®

teries another and a better state *another world* Oh had some power the giftie gie us to see that world as spirits see it then would our minds be set at rest I hope with sights to *make us blest* You astonished me with the paper houses and paper boats I wonder what next flying I hope I shall see that before I fly off and be no more seen paper wings and paper houses to carry on our backs and set them down where we please Oh would not that be fine 'Over the water and over the sea and over the water to Charlie' 'Oh for the happy days of good Queen Bess' Mr. Rimel sent the enclosed When you send a cheque for your subscription please put one *pound* for me as I promised him to give Keep up your *heart* Better days coming for you All love to all kind friends Yours affectionately "JANE LYON."

142. From the 6th May 1867 the Plaintiff had in fact been taking final measures to prepare for the Chancery suit against me which by this time at latest she had resolved on And had been in consultation with the said Mr. Bailey of Sloane-street for that purpose Notwithstanding which she still wrote affectionately to me She had been exceedingly angry with me before I left town because I had been on the Committee for the French Hospital to which her enclosure in the last letter had reference and because I had subscribed ten guineas and she then said I was very lavish "with other people's money."

143. On the 30th May 1867 the Plaintiff had an interview with the said Mr. Jencken to whom she had written for the purpose And she consulted him how she should recover from me and the Defendant Wilkinson the trust deed and mortgage security for the £30,000 which she had settled upon me as aforesaid after her decease And she told him that she did not wish to disturb the gifts of £24,000 and £6,000 to me but thought that she had been too lavish in bestowing on me the subsequent gift Still she had not asked me to restore it or expressed a wish to that effect and I knew nothing of her secret design to recover it.

Digitized by Microsoft®

144. On the following day namely the 31st May 1867 she wrote and sent to me at Malvern the following letter:—

"Thursday, 31st May.

"My dear Daniel,—I am glad to hear you are better than I thought from the wording of your letter although I think you are not sufficiently well to quit the locality of your friends at Malvern from whence you will obtain if it is to be got your permanent recovery therefore I say stay where you are until your throat is better You remember I told you to when you left do not return until you are quite well you are not required here by anyone that I am aware of therefore stay where you are required to perfect your recovery Mr. Starling wishes he had remained longer saying it would have been better for him then I said return again 'Ah' said he 'But now I am in London' therefore do not repent *when in London* wishing you had remained for further improvement Get all the benefit you can from your good friends and I am sure the spirits wish you to I saw Mr. Jenckin yesterday just returned from Paris With kind regards to your friends at Malvern yours affectionately,

"JANE LYON."

And on the 6th June 1867 she wrote and sent me the following letter:—

"17a, Albert Terrace, Albert Gate,
"Hyde Park, 6th June, /67,
"Thursday.

"My dear Daniel,—You say I will be delighted to hear you have got a frightful cold I do not see that a frightful cold will in the least benefit your disease and you said in your last 'A bad beginning makes a good end' I think the reverse I am sorry you have got a bad cold and am sorry you had a bad beginning for I have always been told that makes a worse end You have not been well since I knew you More is *the pity* for you I do PITTY YOU The spirits instead of doing you good does the

Digitized by Microsoft®

reverse therefore I would *cut them* in *toto* wash your hands of them as I mean to do They are not to be *relied* upon I had a book sent to me last week which has made some inpression on my mind *I will not* at present make any comment or observation thereon but at a future time I will tell you what I think of it May you GET WELL and be *happy* without spirits or spiritual power It tends to no good Rather the reverse Mrs. Pepper has desired me often to request you to enclose her street-door key in a letter to me but I have *always* forgot to name it Will you *please* to send it me in *your next letter?* Then I shall be done with her bother *about it* I wish you had *not* taken it with you However do send it at once She is afraid you have lost it Then she must she says have a new lock to her door I have had a letter from Mrs. Senior who writes from her bed I have answered her letter I like her much I do not see Mr. Starling but hope he will go to Malvern My best regards to Dr. and Miss Gully and am yours affectionately,

"JANE LYON."

145. The book referred to in the last letter was as the Plaintiff herself afterwards informed me a book written upon spiritualism by a Frenchman named Chevalier. He advertised in this work that he had been a member of the Spiritual Athenæum hereinbefore mentioned which was untrue And although he stated that the phenomena of spiritualism could not be and were not produced by fraud or contrivance yet he attributed them to the Evil One He has lately I believe with the Plaintiff's permission added a printed slip or notice to the book to the effect that it was in consequence of having read this book that the present proceedings in Chancery were commenced which is also untrue as hereinbefore appears.

146. I have been informed and believe and I charge that immediately before and subsequently to writing the above letter the Plaintiff was having *séances* with true or pretended spiritual mediums.

Digitized by Microsoft®

147. On the 8th June 1867 she wrote and sent to me the following letter also addressed to Malvern where I was:—

"Saturday.

"My dear Daniel,—I am sorry you have not sent the key as I am sure I could not write stronger on that point Now I *request again* that I may have the key on *Monday* morning it is particularly required by Mrs. Pepper as I told you in my last she requires it for a gentleman who sleeps in the house They are she says obliged to sit up to let him in therefore *send it at once* and do not come here on Wednesday you will not see or be sufficiently well remain until you *are quite well* *Do not* come on my account for I mean *carefully to avoid* any more manifestations they are *not good* and do not tend thereto I was happier before I had any of them and am

"Yours affectionately,

"JANE LYON."

148. As I had used the latch key of her lodgings to which she referred to let myself in throughout the winter and I knew as the fact was that the latch key was not really required by any one else and observing the angry and impatient tone of her letters I concluded I had better at once return I did so on Sunday the 9th June 1867 And at half-past eleven o'clock on the following morning (Monday the 10th June) I went to call on her I found the outer door locked instead of being on the latch as usual and when the servant had opened the door I went to the Plaintiff's sitting-room She appeared very glad to see me and was extremely demonstrative in her affection She expressed sorrow that I was not looking better I said that I was sorry that my ill health had kept me away from her She said "Yes poor fellow they may say what they like against you but they can't deny but that you are ill and a great sufferer" She rang the bell and told the servant to bring another cup that I might have some tea She then sat down opposite to me and looking fixedly

Digitized by Microsoft®

at me said "Even if you like Now I have not gone so far but what it can be undone" or words to that effect I said "What do you mean?" She answered "Oh you know well enough what I mean" I was irritated with her and remained silent and I did not know what she was offering to undo She then said in a sneering manner that she had been seeing a great deal of Mrs. Berry and had been having a great many wonderful *séances* with her niece Emma Berry whom Mrs. Berry as she said had been urging her to adopt and that she would do so only Mrs. Berry rather stipulated that the girl should have a French governess She also said "I have been seeing a great deal of Fred Kent lately He is a *darling* boy Poor fellow he has but twenty-three shillings a-week where he is but never mind I shall do something very handsome for him He is *very fond* of me" She then went on to say she had also seen a great deal lately of her friend Mrs. Sims the photographer and had been having *séances* with her adding "I have found out why Mrs. Sims hated you all the winter Because you did nothing for her" I asked her why I should do so She answered that Mrs. Sims claimed to have introduced me this Defendant to the Plaintiff I said that was not so as the Plaintiff well knew that she had herself made inquiries about me of Mrs. Burns and had then introduced herself to me She ordered me not to come again to the house till she sent for me I told her I hoped she would do so the next day for breakfast and that then perhaps she would be able to tell me what on earth I had done to irritate her For in truth I could not accuse myself of having been wanting in gratitude or kindness towards her The said Mrs. Berry who lets furnished houses herself told me on the 17th June 1867 that she had urged the Plaintiff to go into Chancery and that I this Defendant had better run away to America The said Mrs. Berry claims to be a wonderful medium.

149. Not hearing from the Plaintiff and not having

Digitized by Microsoft®

any unkind feelings towards her I wrote and sent the following letter to her the next morning:—

"22, Sloane Street,
"June 11th, 1867.

"My darling Mother,—I am sorry not to have heard from you this morning I was in hopes your better judgment would not allow you to be influenced by those about you A few months ago it would not have been so I console myself with the idea that it is but a momentary thing I will not attempt to influence you in the least I never have done so and will not now I am packing up as the Dr. intends to send me abroad to some of the German baths I wish you would go with me I will pay all expenses It would be such a deep pleasure to have you with me My health is so delicate that ere long there must be a change for the worse or better And if I should pass from the earth I know you would be sorry to think that any want of kindness from you did me harm I will not disguise from you or from any one that such would be the case It is not the simple fact of being so generous and noble in action to me as you have been that constitutes true kindness It is more fully shown in every-day life I took your name because I could in no other way show my esteem and respect for you I felt that I was taking upon myself a solemn undertaking in the sight of God and man when I called you by the sacred name of mother My feelings are all unchanged and I have done my duty as well as my feeble health would allow I have been out of London more than I wished but I have ever asked you to join me More I could not do Praying God to bless and His good angels to guard you.

"Believe me ever your affectionate Son,
"D. H. Lyon."

150. On the same day she wrote and sent me the following letter in answer:—

Digitized by Microsoft®

"17a, Albert Terrace, Hyde Park.
"11th June, /67.

"My dear Daniel,—I have this instant got a letter from you viz. that you are packing up to go away I perfectly approve of your determination I think it will do you good and be assured I wish you every enjoyment and that of health in particular for without that you cannot enjoy anything and I hope with the blessing of God you will perfectly recover your *health* and *strength* I should be glad to see you ere you go Will you appoint this evening at 8 o'clock or to-morrow at 12 o'clock I shall be at home and am my dear Dan

"Your's affectionately,
"JANE LYON."

"D. H. Lyon, Esqr."

151. I wrote a few hurried words to say I would be with her at eight o'clock and went accordingly I found her very pale and she did not shake hands with me as I went in She said "Are you going abroad at once?" I told her I was not as I could not do so before packing up all my pictures and things and that would require some time even after I heard from the doctor who had not yet given me his permission She then said "Now Daniel I wish you to return me that trust deed as I wish to have it" I said "Certainly mother and you know I never asked you for it" She said "It is just as well for you to do so quietly for I have made up my mind to expose the whole swindle You first sought me and then surrounded me with a set of people whom I now find to be a pack of well-known swindlers but I intend to expose the whole thing I have written for Wilkinson to bring that deed and I will burn it before his eyes You may come with him if you like and I will tell you both what I think of you And you may bring all your friends and I will tell them the same Mrs Pepper has been right to caution me and to keep the door locked lest I should be killed in my bed" I sat dumb with astonishment She then told

Digitized by Microsoft®

me that Mrs. Parks was her friend and had seen her almost every day and did so pity her for being forced to make her Will I said "How could that be when I was not in the house when you wrote the letter concerning it" She said "She had been told to go into Chancery and take everything from me and give it to the others who were more deserving and that Fred Kent was an angel in comparison to a sickly man like me" I said "Now listen to me Vituperation is quite unnecessary I would willingly have given you all you asked me as you gave it me of your own free will and accord but you have closed my hands by making these vile charges against me and my friends" The Plaintiff became still more abusive in her language and I left her.

152. As she had on previous occasions repented of her ebullitions of ungovernable temper towards me I wrote and sent her the following letter of which I kept a copy:—

"June 12th.

"My darling Mother,—I hope you are quite well this morning I have not yet heard from Dr. Gully to know what I am to do about going abroad I do wish my health could have been stronger I am very sorry to have been away from you so much I hope the days of sunshine will come soon.

"Your affectionate Son,
"D. H. Lyon.

"I am so ill that I shall go into the country for a few days My address will be

"Stockton House,
"Fleetpond, near Winchfield,
"Hants."

153. To this I received no reply and I wrote and sent her the following letter of which I have kept a copy on the 16th June 1867 and she received it on the same day although by mistake it was dated the 17th June I should most certainly not have done so had I known that she was really meditating hostile proceedings.

Digitized by Microsoft®

"22, Sloane Street.
"June 17th, 1867.

"My dear Mother,—When I left you on Tuesday last I told you I should consult with my friends before I took any steps I have now done so and they one and all declare I should do no such thing as give up a deed which had been signed by you and could be proved to have been done when you were in a sane mind and uninfluenced by any one Now dear mother comes for me to have my say in the matter You gave me the deed of your own free will The letters you wrote to Mr. Wilkinson were with one or two exceptions written when I was not in the house as I can prove by the servant who took them to the post It was then your own good will and kindly feeling which prompted all this Your mind is changed and you wish it back Nothing in the world more natural Unknown to any one I have decided and now write to say that I will give it you on the acceptation of the following conditions:—

"1stly—You will write me a kind letter as you have ever done in which you will acknowledge my personal honesty and that of the friends who have been introduced to you since I knew you This is but fair to me and my friends both ladies and gentlemen.

"2nd—You will give me your written permission to resume my name of Home without that of Lyon.

"3rdly—You will return to me all my valuable jewels laces &c. with the exception of the two brooches I had made for you On my part I will return to you the two rings you gave me and anything else I may have of that kind.

"4thly—You will leave me and mine in undisputed possession of the thirty thousand pounds you in your noble generosity and kindness of heart gave me I would like to have you refund the sum you borrowed last winter but will leave that quite for you to decide I have between thirty and forty letters of your writing to me at different intervals all of them breathing a spirit of perfect kindness and good

Digitized by Microsoft®

feeling and most decided in character In some of them you call me your 'darling boy' and sign yourself 'your affectionate mother' I have also a list of thirty ladies and gentlemen of high position both by birth and breeding who will come forward as they already declare their willingness to do who will prove that you were perfectly sane and also the affectionate manner you ever spoke of me to them as indeed you had no occasion to do otherwise I write this letter at the instigation of no one I know indeed my kind friends would rather prevent me from sending it In all human probability I shall not have long to remain on earth and I wish to have no unkind feelings towards any one and to you I would not have an unkind thought yet I must act with decision in a case like this My name in every country where I have been stands high for honesty and I could not allow a taint of that kind to attach itself to me now when God knows I deserve it so little.

"I will if agreeable to you see your lawyer on Tuesday at 12 o'clock at my rooms 22 Sloane-street when I will remit to him the trinkets you gave me if the conditions herein named are accepted Hoping you are well and praying God to bless and His good angels to guard you

"Believe me ever affectionately and gratefully yours,

"D. H. Lyon."

151. I was wholly ignorant at the time when I sent her the above letter that she had filed her Bill in Chancery making charges against me and my friends I was in very feeble health at the time and required rest and freedom from anxiety I had no ill-feeling towards the Plaintiff and I wrote the above letter without taking advice of any one and for the sake of peace and quiet Had I been aware of such Bill having been filed I most certainly would have scorned to make or accept any offer of compromise unaccompanied by a complete withdrawal of every one of such charges.

152. On the 13th June 1867 as I have since been informed and believe the said Mr. Henry Gould Gibson

Digitized by Microsoft®

introduced the Plaintiff to her present solicitors On the 15th June the Plaintiff filed her Bill and on the 17th obtained on an ex parte application a writ of Ne exeat regno against me This was granted to her upon two affidavits of hers the one filed on the 15th June 1867 and the other on the 17th June 1867 In the first of these she says "I am informed by the said Defendant in private letters which he has written to me during the last three or four days that he has been recommended by his physician Dr. Gully to go at once to the German Baths for the benefit of his (the said Defendant's) health and in one of these letters (written to me on the 11th day of June instant) he says that he is 'packing up' and I verily believe that he intends forthwith to go abroad in accordance with such advice as aforesaid" And in the other of the said affidavits that was filed on the 17th June 1867 she says "Referring to the statements contained in the Bill filed by me in this cause I say that the sum of £20,000 obtained by the Defendant Daniel Dunglass Home alias Daniel Home Lyon under the circumstances in the said Bill stated is now justly due and owing in equity from the said Defendant to me and is as I verily believe in danger of being lost to me by reason of the intention of the said Defendant to go abroad out of the jurisdiction of this Honorable Court of which intention the said Defendant has informed me in his private letters as stated in the affidavit already made by me in this cause And I say that if the said Defendant is allowed to get out of the country I verily believe I shall lose the whole of the said debt."

153. In her said affidavits she suppressed all mention of my having in the letter from which she quoted desired her to accompany me She suppressed all mention of her said letter to me of the 11th June 1867 in which she had approved of my determination to go She suppressed all mention of our conversation at our last interview on the same day in which I had told her that it would take

Digitized by Microsoft®

some time for me to pack up my pictures and things after I had heard from the doctor who had not yet given me his permission She suppressed all mention of my said letter of the 12th June 1867 wherein I told her that I had not yet heard from Dr. Gully what I was to do about going abroad and gave her my country address And finally she also suppressed all mention of my letter received by her on the 16th June as she has since stated in the 22nd paragraph of her said affidavit in this suit filed on the 27th June 1867 in which letter I had told her that I was ready to meet her lawyer at my rooms in Sloane Street on the Tuesday which would be the 18th June 1867 And upon the writ of Ne exeat regno so obtained upon such suppressions and misstatement as aforesaid I dangerously ill as the Plaintiff knew me to be was ignominiously arrested at the house of a friend on the 18th June 1867 and thrown into Whitecross Street Prison whence I was liberated the following day on my depositing in Court the deeds in my possession The shock to my system was so great that I became delirious for four days and I have found it necessary to consult with five physicians And my state of health was such that for nearly three months my reason was tottering and I was wholly unable to give proper or in fact any instructions to my legal advisers And when I applied for time to answer I had to bear the further indignity at the Plaintiff's instigation of being examined in the presence of a lawyer's clerk by a strange doctor who condescended to insult me in his certificate.

154. I charge that the Plaintiff in order to have me as she fancied more completely in her power has from time to time since the month of February 1867 in the conversations and some of the correspondence with me feigned insanity And that on the 17th June 1867 she told Mr. Perdicaris that she had been induced by spiritual communications given through the said Mrs. Berry her niece Emma Berry, Fred. Kent and Mrs. Sims at the

Digitized by Microsoft®

house of the said Mrs. Berry to believe that she had been deceived by the familiar spirit of me this Defendant and that she had been advised at Mrs. Berry's to go to law at once and endeavour to recover the money she had given me And she said to him that she hated my child and that she would rather be locked up in a lunatic asylum than have any of her money go to the child She also complained of her disappointment in me this Defendant on account of my ill health and frequent absences and asked him whether it was not outrageous that she should be tied to a dying man And she asked him further whether I this Defendant was willing to compromise the affair and if so upon what terms He told her as the fact was that he was not in a position to answer those questions and that it was as her friend and not mine that he had called She never mentioned to the said Mr. Perdicaris that she had already filed a Bill and obtained a writ for my arrest The said Mr. Perdicaris had much difficulty in seeing the Plaintiff as the said Mrs. Pepper the landlady falsely told him and all those who called upon the Plaintiff at the time to ask the meaning of her sudden change against me that the Plaintiff could not or would not see them.

155. If the Plaintiff intends to allege or pretend or insinuate at the hearing that she is now really mad or of weak or of unsound mind let it be plainly stated in her Bill as well as the time when she became so in order that I may be prepared with evidence on the subject In that event it must be explained how the infamous charges contained in her said affidavits against Mr. S. C. Hall Mr. Wilkinson and myself came to be deliberately inserted and repeated upon the mere assertion of a woman alleged to be mad or of weak or of unsound mind.

156. Since the institution of this suit the Plaintiff has attended *séances* of real or pretended mediums and has tried to convert others to spiritualism And yet the Plaintiff speaks in her Bill and affidavits as if she treated the whole of spiritualism as an imposture.

Digitized by Microsoft®

157. I have been informed and I believe and charge it to be the fact that the Plaintiff in connivance with the said Mrs. Berry has caused Emma Berry the niece to leave the country in order to prevent her being examined upon the matters mentioned in this Answer.

158. On the 23rd June, 1867 after the institution of this suit and my arrest under the circumstances hereinbefore described the Plaintiff received from the artist and still retains a miniature of herself wearing a lace shawl of my late wife which she had in January ordered him to paint as a present for me And on the 24th June she acknowledged the receipt of it and lest she should be called upon to pay for it described it as "the miniature ordered by Daniel" This observation she interpolated in her letter as an afterthought And the Bill for the picture was accordingly sent in to me on the 3rd July 1867.

159. I submit my case with confidence to the righteous judgment of the Court of Equity being fully persuaded that here at least no prejudices will be allowed to obstruct me in the vindication of my own character and of the honour of my friends who have been so wickedly and wantonly assailed.

F. KELLY.

D. D. HOME. Sworn at No. 32, Lincoln's Inn-fields, in the County of Middlesex, this fourth day of November, 1867, Before me, WM. WILLIAMS, A London Commissioner to administer Oaths in Chancery.

Digitized by Microsoft®

Filed 20th July, 1867.

Between JANE LYON, Widow . . . . *Plaintiff.*

AND

DANIEL DUNGLASS HOME and WILLIAM MARTIN WILKINSON.

Defendants.

THE ANSWER of WILLIAM MARTIN WILKINSON, one of the above-named Defendants, to the Bill of Complaint of the above-named Plaintiff.

IN ANSWER to the said Bill, I, WILLIAM MARTIN WILKINSON, say as follows:—

1. I have read with great surprise the Bill filed by the Plaintiff and her two first affidavits in this suit I have throughout my connection with her business acted with such care and anxious endeavours to protect her against injuring herself by giving away her property without the fullest determination on her part and I have remonstrated so fully with her on many occasions and have put before her so clearly the legal and other consequences of what she was doing that I thought it impossible for her to make any charge against me whatever change might come over her own mind as to the propriety of the gifts she made from time to time to the other Defendant The other Defendant has a perfect right to the name Home-Lyon having taken that name at the request of the Plaintiff but after the Plaintiff's studiously offensive conduct towards him I prefer to describe him by the name of Home.

The first communication I had with her was on the 9th November 1866 when I received from her a letter of that date She had at that time on the 11th October previously given to the Defendant Home £24,000 I received the letter from her by post of which the following is a copy:—

Strictly private.

"Dear Sir,—I wish you to draw up a Will, in the

Digitized by Microsoft®

name of Jane Lyon, widow of Charles Lyon, of Wooth Grange, Bridport, Dorset, making sole heir, my adopted son, Daniel Dunglass Home son of William Home and Elizabeth Macneil his wife, the said Daniel Dunglass Home who will take the name of Daniel Lyon and the arms of Lyon, quartered with the Gibsons of Northumberland, being my own armorial bearings, the said Daniel Lyon my adopted son, to be as I before said, sole heir, residuary legatee, of all such estates, property real, and personal, I may or may become possessed, you will have the kindness, dear sir, to make this my last Will and testament, so binding, and precise, in all its legal formalities, that there cannot be any possibility of disputing the claims of my adopted son, as sole heir and executor; on Monday next, at half-past four, Monday being the twelvth of November, you will bring me the Will, when after reading, I will be prepared, to sign it in the presence of Witnesses.

"I am, dear Sir, yours very faithfully,

"JANE LYON."

"18, Westbourne Place,
"November 9th, 1866."

2. On the same day I wrote her a letter and received an answer in her handwriting of which the following are copies:—

"44, Lincoln's Inn Fields, London, W. C.
"9th Novr., 1866.

"Dear Madam,—I beg to acknowledge the receipt of your letter giving me instructions for your Will, and I will have it prepared, and ready to submit to you for your approval on Monday at ½ past 4 as you request.

"I should have been glad to have seen you before completing the Will, in order that I might have enquired of you the amount of benefit you are giving by the Will, and also whether there are not any relatives to whom you might think it right to give legacies.

Digitized by Microsoft®

"The Will however can at any time be revoked or added to by a Codicil.

"I am, dear Madam, yours faithfy.,

"W. M. WILKINSON."

"Mrs. Lyon,
"18, Westbourne Place, W."

"18, Westbourne Place,
"10th November, '66.

"Dear Sir,—I beg to say as my husband did not mention any of his relations in his Will, I can see no plausible reason why I should do so Please to leave *no blanks* in the Will you make, it is not requisite.

"And am, yours faithfully,

"JANE LYON."

3. Upon this I had the Will prepared as follows as appears by my draft:—

WILL OF MRS. JANE LYON.

This is the last Will and testament of me Jane Lyon of 18 Westbourne Place in the county of Middlesex widow of the late Charles Lyon of Wooth Grange Bridport Dorset esquire I devise and bequeath all the real and personal estate to which I shall be entitled at the time of my decease or over which I shall at the time of my decease have a general power of appointment or disposition by Will unto my adopted son Daniel Dunglass Home of 22 Sloane Street Chelsea esquire his heirs executors administrators and assigns respectively for his and their own absolute use and benefit nevertheless as to estates vested in me upon trusts or by way of mortgage subject to the trusts and equities affecting the same respectively and I hereby declare it to be my wish that the said Daniel Dunglass Home shall take upon himself and be called by the surname of Lyon [only] and shall thenceforth style and write himself in all letters deeds and instruments and upon all occasions whatsoever by that surname and shall

Digitized by Microsoft®

also use and bear the arms of Lyon [only] quartered as the same are now quartered with the arms of the Gibsons of Northumberland as the same are now used and borne by me I appoint the said Daniel Dunglass Home sole executor of this my Will and thereby revoke all other testamentary writings,

In witness &c. November 12th 1866.

Attested by Thos. HAWKESLEY, M.D.,
H. A. RUDALL,
W. M. WILKINSON.

4. On the 12th November I called on her with the Will intending fully to satisfy myself as to her competency in the first place to make a Will at all as I considered her extraordinary wish to benefit largely a person who was so recently unknown to her required me to act with the greatest caution I accordingly began the conversation with general subjects connected with Northumberland and Durham and the families there I found her memory excellent and her whole manner and conversation giving evidence of a very strong-minded woman She asked me to shew her the Will which I did and read over to her one copy whilst she read the other I asked her about her family and whether or not they were dependent upon her and she informed me they were well provided for that her late husband's sister Mrs. Clutterbuck was of considerable age and an invalid and was wealthy and that all her husband's relatives were well off and did not require her assistance and that moreover neither she nor her late husband had ever cared much for any of them excepting his said sister I asked her if she had already made any Will and she said she had, but she did not say to whom she had left her money nor how much she had but she said it was considerable I said to her "Well you must before have been satisfied to leave your property to some one or more of your family and now that you have so suddenly become acquainted with Mr. Home who was a

Digitized by Microsoft®

stranger to you a month ago it does not seem right to give him all and them nothing they will be sure to be greatly disappointed and it is a pity to leave it so" She repeated that she did not now intend to leave them anything as she had determined to adopt Mr. Home and it was the happiest thing that had ever happened to her and that she had been living so much by herself with no one to care for her that she now found the greatest comfort in thinking that she could have him as her son and have him always with her I reminded her of what she had already done for him which was so much more than enough and that she might be disappointed with him or he with her and that as the property had come from her husband it would not be proper to give it away from his relatives She would hardly let me argue the case with her and said she was quite able to do as she liked and she was determined to leave it to him especially as she had no injunctions from her husband as to the way she should deal with her property I asked her in the most pointed way if what she was doing was in consequence of any spiritual control or orders and she said it was not but was her own unbiassed wish and determination I mentioned to her that I was bound to ask her all these questions and to satisfy myself that she was under no control or improper influence She told me that she had been a believer in spiritualism all her life and that she could not remember a time when she did not have wonderful things happen to herself of that kind and that the subject was therefore not new to her I told her that if she were to act upon any such reasons in making her Will in Mr. Home's favour she would be doing a great injustice for that the truth and identity of spiritual communications could never be depended on She assured me in the most positive manner that in what she was doing she was not influenced by any such reasons but that she had taken the greatest liking to Mr. Home and found him all that she could wish and it was a delight to her to find that she could make such a good use of her

Digitized by Microsoft®

money I asked her if she would not wait but she said she had that afternoon destroyed her former Will and pointing to the fire she said It is nothing but ashes now and I must make my Will now as I wish. I told her that as I was a friend of the other Defendant it would be much more satisfactory to me if she would advise with some other Solicitor but she said she was perfectly satisfied with me and would not go to any one else and that I had cautioned her in every way that any one else could and she quite understood what she was about and was a good woman of business I said everything I could think of to her to put her on her guard and prevent her from making the Will at all in his favour till she knew more of him and to employ another Solicitor but she was so energetic and determined that I could make no impression on her Shortly after Dr. Hawkesley and Mr. Rudall came and I repeated the same in their presence omitting only the particulars as to the Will she was making Ultimately she said there was nothing more to prevent her signing the Will and it was done in duplicate. The other Defendant was not in the room at any part of the time and only came in after the Will had been signed and put away Before I left I asked her what she would do with the Wills and suggested that she might keep one and leave the other at her bankers She hesitated a moment and said "No please to take them both yourself and keep them safely" I said "I had better take only the copy at all events and you keep the other" But she refused and put both copies into my hand and I brought them away with me The next morning I made a memorandum which is as follows:—

"13th Nov. 1866, 10 a. m.

Mrs. Lyon's Will.—Yesterday at ¼ p. 4 I called on Mrs. Lyon at 18 Westbourne-place and had a quarter of an hour's conversation with her on indifferent subjects principally as to her acquaintance with Northumberland and Durham. Then she told me that Dr. Hawkesley

Digitized by Microsoft®

and another gentleman were coming shortly, and I had better read over her Will. I then produced the Will in duplicate and read one copy. She said she feared the words would not include property she might afterwards acquire and which might be considerable. She desired me to strike out the word "only" twice, so that Mr. Home might be Daniel Home Lyon. I asked her again if there were no relatives or friends whom she would like to benefit, she said no. I pressed her 5 or 6 times on this point, and she refused. She said her husband had told her that he would not indicate any mode of dealing with the property he was leaving her and that he wished it to be entirely her own to do with as she pleased. I reminded her that she had known Mr. Home a very short time and that she was giving him a very large benefit, and that certainly there were some of her connexions who would be disappointed. She said, "Yes, they will, but this is the way in which I choose to leave it."

Dr. Hawkesley shortly after came, and soon Mr. Rudall. In the presence of both I repeated the substance of the above excepting that I did not indicate what was done for Mr. Home, but asked if she did not wish to include any others than were mentioned. I also asked if she had any Solicitor whom she would consult as well as me She said she had none, and there was no occasion for any but me. The Will then executed and attested.

W. M. W.

5. A few days afterwards the Defendant Home desired me to prepare a deed announcing his change of name I had ascertained at the Herald's College that it could not be done by Royal Warrant I sent him a draft of the deed which the Plaintiff informed me she had read over and approved of and wished it to be carried out at once.

6. The following is a copy of the deed :—

DEED POLL.

To all to whom these presents may come I Daniel

Digitized by Microsoft®

Dunglas Home of 22 Sloane Street in the county of Middlesex esquire send greeting whereas Mrs Jane Lyon the widow of the late Charles Lyon esquire of Wooth Grange Bridport in the county of Dorset has adopted me as her son and has desired that I should take and use the name of *Lyon* as my last and principal surname in lieu of or in addition to the name of *Home* and to omit the name of *Dunglas* Now therefore know ye that I the said Daniel Dunglas Home do hereby for myself and my heirs publicly adopt assume and take for me and them for ever hereafter the name of *Lyon* as a surname in lieu of and in addition to that of *Home* and I do declare that my name from henceforth will be and is DANIEL HOME LYON and that all and every acts deeds and assurances done and executed by me in the name of *Lyon* shall be as valid and effectual against or for me as if the same had been done and executed in the name of Daniel Dunglas Home.

IN WITNESS whereof I the said Daniel Dunglas Home have hereunto set my hand and seal this third day of December A.D. 1866.

D. D. HOME.

Signed sealed and delivered by the above named Daniel Dunglas Home in the presence of

W. J. WILKINSON,
44, Lincoln's Inn Fields.

7. Mrs. Lyon had without any previous communication with me on the subject sent me a message through the Defendant Home soon after the date of her Will that she would be glad if I could find a mortgage security for her for £30,000 She had resided many years in the north of England and I heard of a security in the neighbourhood she had lived in and where the family of the principal persons in the firm were known to her She wanted to have £5 per cent. for the money Having been applied to for £25,000 I wrote her the following letter omitting the parties' names and particulars which might be injurious to the borrowers.

Digitized by Microsoft®

"44, Lincoln's Inn Fields, London, W. C.
"4th December, 1866.

"Dear Mrs. Lyon,—I have now been applied to for a sum of £25,000 on mortgage, upon a security which although not of the usual marketable description, is yet one which for safety, could not, I believe, be improved.

"It consists of 20 acres of land valued at £1,000 an acre at . . . in Yorkshire, upon which furnaces and works have been erected, and only one year in operation, at a cost of £75,000; so that the value of the whole is about £100,000.

In addition to this there is the security of the gentleman to whom the property belongs, and whose security alone would be more than ten times sufficient—

. . . . . .

"The interest to be paid half yearly to the bankers of the lender.

"If you merely look to the security for the repayment of the money, and the punctual payment of interest in the meantime, I believe this would be certain, and I could confidently recommend it, so far as I have been informed at present, and if on the necessary investigation, it should turn out in all respects as represented I shall be glad to know what you think of it and remain,

"Dear Mrs. Lyon,
"Yours very truly,
"W. M. WILKINSON."

"Mrs. Lyon,
"17a, Albert Terrace, Knightsbridge."

8. The next day the 6th December she called on me to speak about the mortgage and I told her all I could about it and she determined to have it if the title and value were satisfactory but said that if it was good for £30,000 she would much prefer that sum to a smaller On the 8th December I received from her the following letter which was the first intimation I had received of the intention therein expressed:—

Digitized by Microsoft®

"17a, Albert Terrace, Albert Gate, Hyde Park,
"7th December, 1866.

"My dear Mr. Wilkinson,—On the occasion of my adopted son taking the name of Lyon I wish to give him a little surprise. I intend to add Six thousand pounds to the Twenty-four I have already given him, making a sum total of Thirty thousand; will you kindly prepare a deed thoroughly legal in every respect and let the previous sum which I gave him on the 11th October be included so that there can be no after difficulty about the whole proceeding.

"I am, dear Mr. Wilkinson, yours very truly.

"JANE LYON."

9. The same day I wrote and sent her the following letter:—

"44, Lincoln's Inn Fields, London, W. C.
"8th December, 1866.

"Dear Mrs. Lyon,—In carrying out your wishes as expressed in your letter of yesterday, I shall be glad to know if it is your desire to make a transfer of Consols of the value of £6,000 cash, or in what other way do you wish it to be carried out. If you wish to make a transfer, it will only be necessary to give directions to the brokers when it will be convenient to you to go to the bank, and I can prepare a deed expressing your intention of giving him the money, and include it in the former sum also.

"I remain, dear Mrs. Lyon, yours faithfully,

"W. M. WILKINSON."

"Mrs. Lyon,
"17a, Albert Terrace, Albert Gate, S. W."

I received from her the following letter which I proceeded to act upon by having the deed prepared:—

"17a, Albert Terrace, Albert Gate, Hyde Park,
"9th December, 1866.

"Dear Sir,—It is my intention to make a transfer of Consols to the value of £6,000 *cash*, and you can if you please, prepare a *Legal* deed, expressing my intention, of giving him *Daniel Home Lyon*, the money above, including

Digitized by Microsoft®

the former sum of £24,000 also, the £24,000 was transferred of the 11th October, and the £6,000 will be transferred to-morrow, 10th December, 1866.

"I am, dear Sir, yours very truly,

"JANE LYON."

"W. M. Wilkinson, Esqr."

10. I wrote to her on the 11th December with the draft of the deed the following letter:—

"44, Lincoln's Inn Fields, London, W. C.
"11th December, 1866.

"Dear Mrs. Lyon,—I have now made a draft of the intended deed in favor of Mr. D. H. Lyon according to the directions contained in your letter, and I send it to you that you may look it over, and see that it is according to your wishes.

"I wish to bring clearly before you that in making the gifts of £30,000, which you have done, you have given it to him absolutely, and without power of revocation, and as I have known Mr. Lyon so long and so intimately, I shall best do my duty to you by suggesting that you should have some other legal advice in carrying out the business, if you think it necessary.

"I remain, dear Mrs. Lyon, yours very truly,

"W. M. WILKINSON."

"Mrs. Lyon."

On the same day she returned the draft to me approved and sent me the following letter:—

"17a, Albert Terrace, Albert Gate, Hyde Park,
"11th December, 1866.

"Dear Mr. Wilkinson,—I am perfectly *satisfied* with your legal advice, and wish for *no other* adviser in respect to the transfer deed, of £30,000 which I give *permanently* to my adopted son, D. H. Lyon, Esqr.

"And am, &c., &c., &c.,

"JANE LYON."

After the word "children" at the end of the 9th line

Digitized by Microsoft®

of the deed I had inserted in the draft the words "And all my husband's family and connections are well provided for." These words she struck out and put in the margin "I, Jane Lyon, have drawn my pen over this; I do not approve of such insertion." She afterwards told me that she had struck out the words because she did not know but what some one of them might appear and say he was poor enough to have some of her money.

11. On the 12th of December I wrote to her a letter of which the following is a copy:—

"44, Lincoln's Inn Fields, London, W. C.
"12th Decr. 1866.

"Dear Mrs. Lyon,—I will call on you if possible this afternoon about ¼ p. 4, with the deed for your signature.

"Yours faithfully,
"W. M. WILKINSON."

"Mrs. Lyon,
"17a, Albert Terrace."

I went to her according to this appointment and on my reaching the house she said she was very glad to see me alone as she wished to have some important conversation with me I produced the deed of gift and read the whole over to her she looking at the deed and I reading from the draft and she then executed and I attested it. Then she commenced by saying that the more she saw of Daniel the more she liked him and it was the greatest happiness to her to have him about her—that there was no chance of her making any alteration in her Will and that she was desirous of doing as her husband had done towards her all she could to save the duty in case of her death She asked me what the duty would be and I told her £10 per cent. She said that her husband had transferred all his mortgages to her so that there was hardly any probate duty to pay and she had determined to give him the further sum of £30,000 and to have the mortgage deed made out in his name I told her that the mere question of saving legacy duty was not to be considered against the all important

Digitized by Microsoft®

question of divesting herself of her property and that it was impossible to say that she might not afterwards regret giving so large a sum to one whom she had known so short a time I repeated also what I had before said about her relatives having the first claim on her and she said she was determined to give nothing to them adding that neither she nor her husband had ever liked them in consequence of some old family quarrel which compelled him to sell an estate to which he was much attached and that she had no sympathy with them except Mrs. Clutterbuck.

I also urged upon her that she had already given the Defendant Home so large a sum and placed him in such a position as was only to be equalled in novels and romances and that a man like him with £30,000 had as much as he could possibly make a good use of That I saw no occasion but the contrary for increasing it and that I would rather give money to hospitals than to make such a gift after what she had already done for him She said she would do it and desired me to have the mortgage deed made out in his name I asked her if she were desirous of doing this in consequence of any spirit communications for that if so I could have nothing to do with it on any such ground She said that she was not influenced by anything but the intention of placing him in an independent position and saving the legacy duty as she was satisfied she should never change her mind I told her that the legacy duty was not worth thinking of That she ought to act entirely and independently on her own judgment and that it was never wise to give away much during one's life and she had already given an unheard-of sum which was more than enough for all the Defendant's wants She said she had considered it in every way and wished it to be done and that I was very right to give her the warnings I had done but she would take the consequences I then told her there was no occasion to come to a conclusion now as the deed would not be ready for some time and she must consider it in the meantime Soon afterwards the Defendant

Digitized by Microsoft®

came in and nothing more was said about it We dined and spent the evening together.

12. The following is a copy of the deed which she executed on that day in my presence and I attested her execution of it:—

DECLARATION

As to Gift of £24,000 *Cash and the transfer of* £6,798 17*s.* 4*d. Consols.*

To all to whom these presents shall come I Jane Lyon of No. 17a Albert-Terrace Albert-gate Hyde Park in the County of Middlesex the widow and relict of Charles Lyon late of Wooth Grange Bridport in the County of Dorset Esquire deceased Send greeting whereas under and by virtue of the last Will and testament of my said late husband Charles Lyon Esquire deceased I am entitled to a large fortune in money and securities for my own absolute use and benefit free from any trust or condition imposed thereon by his said Will or otherwise howsoever And whereas I have no children and whereas I have been minded and desirous to take and adopt Daniel Dunglas Home of 22 Sloane-street Hyde Park aforesaid as my son And whereas with my sanction and at my desire and request the said Daniel Dunglas Home has executed a deed poll or instrument in writing bearing date the third day of December instant and the same is intended to be enrolled as of record in Her Majesty's High Court of Chancery whereby the said Daniel Dunglas Home declared that he had taken the surname of "Lyon" in lieu and instead of "Home" and that in future he intended to be called and known as "Daniel Home Lyon" And whereas I the said Jane Lyon being desirous of placing him in a position of independence suitable to his rank and position in life as my adopted son and with a view to that end on the eleventh day of October last I gave to the said Daniel Home Lyon the sum of twenty-four thousand pounds cash And whereas in further pursuance of such desire and on the occasion of

Digitized by Microsoft®

his having publicly taken my name on the tenth day of December instant I caused to be transferred from my own name in the books of the Governor and Company of the Bank of England into the old names of Daniel Home Lyon the sum of £6,798 17*s.* 4*d.* Three Pounds per Cent. Consolidated Bank Annuities equivalent to the further sum of six thousand pounds cash And whereas it was my intention in making the said respective gift and transfer as aforesaid and it is my present wish and intention absolutely and irrevocably to vest in the said Daniel Home Lyon for himself his executors administrators and assigns the absolute use and enjoyment of the moneys thereby respectively given and transferred as aforesaid Now know ye that in further evidence of such my desire and intention and to remove all doubts suspicions and controversies in that behalf I the said Jane Lyon do hereby for myself my heirs executors and administrators freely absolutely and irrevocably declare that I have made the said gift and transfer of my own will and pleasure only and without any influence control or interference of the said Daniel Home Lyon or of any other person and that the said Daniel Home Lyon his executors administrators and assigns shall stand possessed of and be entitled to the said sums of Twenty-four thousand pounds and the said Three pounds per Cent. Consolidated Bank Annuities so representing the sum of six thousand pounds by me transferred as aforesaid for his and their own absolute use benefit and enjoyment without any reservation condition trust or purpose whatsoever As witness my hand and seal this twelfth day of December One thousand eight hundred and sixty-six.

JANE LYON.

Signed, sealed, and delivered by the above-named Jane Lyon, in the presence of W. M. Wilkinson, Solicitor, 44, Lincoln's Inn-fields.

13. On the 21st December 1866 I wrote to her as follows:—

Digitized by Microsoft®

"44, Lincoln's Inn Fields, London, W. C.
"21 December, 1866.

"My dear Mrs. Lyon,—I have now had the examination of the title to the property at . . . . . together with the plans, &c., and I find all to be satisfactory. I have also placed the plans and statement of the property to be mortgaged in the hands of Mr. May, of Great George-street, Westminster, who is I believe the most competent person as a valuer, and I have his preliminary valuation at above £75,000, so that I consider the value is quite sufficient for a loan of £30,000, which you told me you would much prefer to a less sum.

"I am also preparing the mortgage deed to you, and I am making arrangements to complete the business on the 3rd or 4th of January. I shall be glad to know if that time will be convenient to you to sell out the stock.

"Be kind enough to let me hear from you here as to your wishes.

"Yours very truly,
"W. M. WILKINSON.

"Mrs. Lyon."

14. The Plaintiff in answer wrote me as follows:—

"17a, Albert Terrace, Albert Gate, Hyde Park,
"21st December, '66.

"Dear Mr. Wilkinson,—I am glad you find the examination to the title of the . . . . . Property in question satisfactory, and that the value is sufficient for the advance of £30,000 by me as a mortgage thereon, and should you have the deed ready for completion, by the time you mention I have no doubt the cash will be *comatable*. Of course I must approve first, by a meeting to be arranged here, by you, there must be a legal deed, also respecting the interest to be paid to me, and to be kept in *my deed* box, in the Bank, Birchin Lane, and am, dear Sir, with great confidence all will be correct.

"Yours very truly,
"JANE LYON."

Digitized by Microsoft®

15. I then went out of town for ten days and the following correspondence took place between us in the interval:—

"44, Lincoln's Inn Fields, London, W. C.
"23rd December, 1866.

"Dear Mrs. Lyon,—I have got the intended mortgage deed drawn by Counsel, and as you have given me no instructions in writing to make it out in any other name than yours, your name is inserted in it as the lender of the £30,000.

"As the sum is so large, and the gift of it so beyond experience, after what you have so munificently given to Mr. Home Lyon, I ought in justice both to you and to myself to have your definite and well considered instructions before I act upon them. You have already placed him not only beyond want, but in a position of affluence, and so that with whatever affection you may regard him, there is no reason why you should not consider any claims of your connections to whatever extent you may think desirable. I ought also to bring forcibly to your notice, that if you give Mr. H. Lyon this further sum of £30,000, by allowing his name to be inserted in the mortgage deed instead of your own, you are making him an irrevocable gift which whatever may occur, you cannot recall. If however you wish to do this, and with full knowledge of its consequences, I shall be obliged by your giving me definite instructions, to strike out your own name from the draft and to insert his as the lender.

"In that case I shall have no difficulty in securing you by a proper deed to be executed by him the payment of the annual interest on the mortgage for your life which is what you mentioned to me to be your wish to reserve for yourself, giving him the absolute property in the principal.

"I remain, dear Mrs. Lyon, yours faithfully,
"W. M. WILKINSON.

"I write this from the Country, but please address me here as usual.

"Mrs. Lyon."

Digitized by Microsoft®

16. "17a, Albert Terrace, Albert Gate,
"Hyde Park.
"26th December, '66.

"Dear Mr. Wilkinson,—In reply to your favour, carrying truth, reason, and best advice, we cannot surely foresee what time may bring forth, and it is best to be on the safe side. Daniel is at *present*, all that the most fastidious can wish for, but there is no knowing what time, and an entire independence may do; he may consider me *a bore*, and cut me altogether, which may probably be anything but agreeable *to me;* otherwise he may inherit all I have, as I have little love for any of my husband relations, except his favorite sister, Mrs. Clutterbuck, and she is not *likely* to outlive me. I wish you to make out the mortgage deed without inserting either Daniel's name or mine, until you *bring* it here for approval. I also wish you to make a *strong* legal deed, *at my expense*, as to the interest being paid me, without any *interference* or *control* thereof by Daniel, as I do not like, or *intend* to be, *in any* way, an *annuitant*, or have the *appearance* of such. If *such* a *legal* deed can be made, I should prefer it, and not *otherwise* as I pay for it, *whichever* way it turns.

"In all my mortgages, I have a power of receiver, in case of the interest not being paid, within 6 months after due, and a limited time of 21 days, for the interest to be paid half-yearly. If not paid then, int. to be 6 pr. ct. Mine is at 5 pr. ct. Also a power of sale, without impeachment, but this is all irrelevant, you knowing much better than me, and remain,

"Dear Sir, yours very respectfully,
"JANE LYON."

---

17. "Dawlish, Devon,
"29th December, 1866.

"Dear Mrs. Lyon,—Your letter has been forwarded to me here, and in answering it I can only repeat what I said in my former letter, that if you make the gift of this

Digitized by Microsoft®

additional large sum it will be irrevocable, as much as is that which you have already given to Mr. Lyon.

"You can alter your Will whenever you please, but not such a matter as this. It is my duty to place this before you in the clearest way, in order that you may exercise your judgment upon it, and after having done this, I have only to carry out your determination.

"If you determine to keep the control over the mortgage-money I have only to leave the deed as it is drawn, but if you choose to give him the principal, you might reserve the interest to be paid direct to yourself so long as the mortgage lasts during your life, and if it should be paid off then Mr. Lyon should enter into a deed for you to keep, engaging that in whatever it is invested, the interest shall be reserved to you.

"The only inconvenience to this is that it will disclose to the borrowers on the face of the deed the nature of the transaction, but there is no practical objection in this which should at all weigh against the security it would be to you to have the interest paid direct to yourself.

"I shall provide in the deed for the interest to be 6 per cent. but to be reduced to 5 if paid punctually.

"With such a security as furnaces &c. it would be of no use to have a receiver, but I have done what is better by making the borrowers tenants at a rent to cover the interest so that you will have a power of distress and in addition a power of sale of the fullest kind.

"If you will kindly write me to Lincoln's Inn-fields your well-considered decision I can have the deed completed and it can be going on during my absence but if you wish to see me before you decide I will come up at once and bring the draft with me for your approval.

"Yours very truly,

"W. M. WILKINSON.

"Mrs. Lyon."

Digitized by Microsoft®

18. "17a, Albert Terrace, Albert Gate,
"Hyde Park,
"29th Decr. 1866.

"Dear Mr. Wilkinson,—In reply to yours of this date, I can only repeat, what I did in my last, 1st, that I *wish* for Daniel to have the principal at my *demise;* that the only difficulty is the interest, payable to me, during my life. Daniel *may* consider the principal so much as *his own*, that he may *in time* pay it with a grudge, and as I said before, think me in the way. I am sure I shall *never wish* to leave the principal past him; I am *decided* upon that point, very *certainly;* so now you know the difficulty, and I *now leave the matter* to you *altogether*, I have the *fullest* confidence in your integrity, and your clear and *disinterested* management. I shall keep your letters, with the deed, for me to keep, feeling sure you will do the best for me in the concern, and am, dear Sir, yours very truly, with the compliments of the season to yourself and Mrs. Wilkinson, "JANE LYON."

---

19. "Dawlish, Devon,
"30th December, 1866.

"Dear Mrs. Lyon,—As there is so little time to get the mortgage completed before you leave town, and there ought to be no haste in deciding upon so extremely important a matter as whether you should or not give up £30,000, I would suggest that it will be better that your name shall be retained in the mortgage deed, and you can at any time afterwards, by a short deed, transfer the principal, if you should wish to do so, retaining the interest for your life. I think that this would be better than doing it in the mortgage deed itself; and if you approve, and will kindly write me at once to Lincoln's Inn-fields, I can have the deed made ready to send into the country on Tuesday for execution, and settle in London on the 4th. I shall be back on Tuesday and at the office on Wednesday.

"Yours very truly,
"W. M. WILKINSON."

"Mrs. Lyon."

Digitized by Microsoft®

20. "17a, Albert Terrace, Albert Gate. Hyde Park,
"31st December, 1866.

"Dear Mr. Wilkinson,—I wish you to make out a mortgage deed for Thirty thousand pounds in the name of my adopted son Daniel Home Lyon and he must make out a deed giving me a life interest in the Thirty thousand pounds reserving none of it for himself viz. the interest thereof simply giving me a life interest in it, and the power to receive *all* interest accruing *from* the said Thirty thousand pounds. We are not going out of town on the fifth, therefore it can remain until you come *to town*.

"And am, dear Mr. Wilkinson, yours most truly,
"JANE LYON."

"P.S.—I consider the sooner the business is done the better, so that it is well done, and it is only you can do it so."

---

21. "44, Lincoln's Inn Fields, London, W. C.
"2 Jany., 1867.

"Dear Mrs. Lyon,—I got back last night, and in coming here this morning, I have had a fall and sprained my ancle, so that I fear I shall not be able to get out for 2 or 3 days, I intend therefore to stay with my friend Mr. . . . . at 44, Russell Square, so as to be near here, and ready for business.

"I got your letter last night, but as it would very much complicate the mortgage to set out in it the private arrangement for giving the principal to Mr. Lyon and reserving the interest to you, I have found it far better to take the mortgage to yourself in the usual way, and with all the necessary powers.

"You can as soon as it is signed and completed, by a separate deed assign the principal as you wish to retain the interest, so that it shall be paid direct to yourself without any interference.

"I dare say that the mortgage deed will be signed by all the parties by Friday, and therefore if the weather

Digitized by Microsoft®

should allow your going to the City to sell out the £30,000 on or before that day, it can be completed then.

"Will you write me here as usual and I shall get your letter.

"Yours very truly,

"W. M. WILKINSON."

"Mrs. Lyon."

---

22. "17a, Albert Terrace, Albert Gate, Hyde Park,
"2nd January, 1867.

"Dear Mr. Wilkinson,—There is one other circumstance in my letter I forgot, viz., that in my letters I do not mention that it is my wish *that I do appoint you at all times my Solicitor* over the Thirty thousand pounds *as long* as I *do live*, and to receive my interest *at all times* from the *parties* holding the said principal of Thirty thousand pounds. My receipt to you is to be sufficient guarantee for the interest arising therefrom. This will *add to the strength* of the deed for me to keep.

"And am, dear Sir,

"Yours respectfully,

"JANE LYON."

"P.S.—Should the present mortgage be paid off, I must have full power to invest again through you, in accordance to my wish at all times for my life. If I have not this power, he *might* call it in and invest it, God knows where or how, this must not be, he must not have that power, while I live, and *reserve the interest*, I must have sole control over the principal.—JANE LYON.

"N.B.—Will you please to bring this letter when you come. There is no haste, we are not going from home. —J. L."

---

23. "17a, Albert Terrace, Albert Gate, Hyde Park,
"2nd Jany. 1867.

"Dear Mr. Wilkinson,—I certainly did think, that my letter on the subject, was very clear, viz., that I by a

Digitized by Microsoft®

strong legal deed, give Thirty thousand pounds to Daniel *reserving* to myself, all interest thereof, for the whole term of my natural life. Daniel by strong legal deed, gives me all interest thereof, taking none of it for himself, so long as I live; this is I think the purport of my last letter to you, and this mode will obviate any difficulty which might arise, as to *any other* mortgage. *Should* this be *paid* off, there will be no occasion to make out another deed. I think you will see this, but I know you are *scrupulously* honest, and wish me to be secure, for which I thank you, but I can as I have said place the *greatest confidence* in your proceedings in this business, viz., make out the mortgage deed *entirely* in Daniel's name. I have nothing to do with, except the interest in it, only the Thirty thousand pounds, viz., the interest thereof, and whichever way it is invested, without having reference to *this mortgage* or any other; it is simply the interest upon the principal, for which the *Legal* deed must be made by *Daniel* which I know now, you must perfectly understand.

"I am, dear Sir, yours very faithfully,

"JANE LYON."

"W. M. Wilkinson, Esqr."

---

24. "17a, Albert Terrace, Albert Gate,
"2nd January, 1867.

"Dear Mr. Wilkinson,—Since I sent off the letter to you, I have thought of the *best* way to obviate *all difficulties*, viz., by appointing *you my trustee over the* Thirty thousand pounds, and by your inserting your name *with Daniel's* in the mortgage, without *reference* to the trust, the interest to be paid to yourself, and my receipt to you to be sufficient during my life for the interest. I think *this is the best plan yet* thought of, and then I shall be *perfectly* satisfied with you as trustee and receiver, the interest going direct to you from the parties holding the principal, and Daniel having no power over any of

Digitized by Microsoft®

the property during my life, neither to *call in* or invest, *probably in America.* The trust deed must be made strong and legal, giving *myself, through you,* my trustee and receiver, all power.

"And am, dear Sir,

"Yours faithfully,

"JANE LYON."

---

25. "44, Lincoln's Inn Fields, London, W. C.
"4th January, 1867.

"Dear Mrs. Lyon,—I got your letter of the 2nd last evening and can only say that whatever be your wishes I will carry them out in the best way I can for your security.

"Your suggestion is a perfectly practicable one, and can be substantially carried out by a legal deed. But it would be very inexpedient to make all these private arrangements on the face of the mortgage deed itself to which so many strangers are parties, and I would recommend for your consideration whether it would not be best to do what you want by a separate deed with which the borrowers will have nothing to do.

"It is in fact only another, and in my opinion a better, mode of carrying out the same thing; and if you approve of this, I will in a few days after the completion of the mortgage submit to you the draft of the intended deed.

"I hope that I may by that time be sufficiently recovered to call upon you.

"Yours very truly,

"W. M. WILKINSON."

"Mrs. Lyon."

---

26. "17a, Albert Terrace, Albert Gate,
"Hyde Park,
"5 Jan. 1867.

"Dear Mr. Wilkinson",—I perfectly agree with you that it would be highly injudicious, to endeavour to carry out my wishes in a mortgage deed, open to the inspection of so many persons.

Digitized by Microsoft®

"You can I have no doubt do it more effectually, carrying out my views in a *separate* legal deed; therefore, you perceive, I highly approve of your making a draft of such, for my approval. I trust you will be sufficiently well soon to see the completion of the mortgage. Do pray take great care of yourself, and have the *best* advice; an honest man in the law is worth *far more* than his *weight in gold.*

"And am, yours faithfully,

"JANE LYON."

"W. M. Wilkinson, Esq., 44, Lincoln's Inn Fields."

27. On Monday the 7th day of January, I saw her and had a long conversation with her respecting the completion of the mortgage and also as to her intended gift of it to the Defendant Home She expressed the greatest affection for him and said she was determined to carry it out in the way proposed I reiterated to her all the old arguments and in addition I told her that it would not now even be the means of saving the duty inasmuch as there would be succession duty now chargeable I again warned her against being in any way influenced by any spirit communications or by anything but her unbiassed reason and she assured me she was not On this occasion she told me that she had received the same advice from Lady D. who had told her not to be guided in any worldly matters by any communications and she did not intend to be She said whatever happened she had more money than she could want and she was only too glad to make Daniel independent after all the obloquy he had suffered.

28. The following correspondence then took place between us:—

"44, Lincoln's Inn Fields, London, W. C.
"9 January, 1867.

"My dear Mrs. Lyon,—I am happy to inform you that I have to-day completed the mortgage for £30,000 to you and have paid over the money.

Digitized by Microsoft®

"I will bring the deed for your signature in a day or two.

"I will also now prepare for your approval the draft of the deed in favour of Mr. Lyon according to your instructions in your letter, and in the conversation I had with you on Monday last.

"I hope in a day or two to be able to lay before you the proposal for another mortgage security.

"Yours faithfully,

W. M. WILKINSON."

"Mrs. Lyon."

---

29. "44, Lincoln's Inn Fields, London, W. C.
"11th January, 1867.

"My dear Mrs. Lyon,—I am still so lame that I have great difficulty in getting about, but I hope in a day or two to be better and to see you.

"I have now got the particulars of the other mortgage security, and which I believe to be as good and safe as the one just completed, and that either the property to be mortgaged, by itself, or the personal security of the borrowers, by itself, would be perfectly ample; but of course you would have the security of both in the mortgage, should you be willing to take it.

"The parties wish to borrow £25,000 on 12 acres of freehold land valued at £1,000 an acre. They have recently had to pay £12,000 for an additional acre, and on this land there are five first-rate furnaces and extensive foundries, the whole being valued at over £80,000.

"The borrowers are several of them the same as in the last mortgage, but this business is quite distinct from the other, and the works about one mile off.

"The names are:—

* * * * * * * *

* * * * * * * *

Digitized by Microsoft®

"I shall be glad if you will consider the question, and let me have your opinion upon it.

"Yours very truly,

"W. M. WILKINSON."

"Mrs. Lyon."

---

30. "17a, Albert Terrace, Albert Gate, Hyde Park,
"11th Jany. '67.

"Dear Sir,—I have always had, an authenticated, examd. copy, of the mortgage deed. This is *essential.* My husband was very particular, on this point, he examined it with the *deed itself*, and saw that it corresponded in every point, before he signed it, therefore please when you come to bring them *both* with you, it is at the borrowers' expense. Please to drop me a line previous. I hope your uncle is now *quite well.*

"Yours faithfully,

"JANE LYON."

"W. M. Wilkinson, Esq."

---

31. "17a, Albert Terrace, Albert Gate, Hyde Park,
"13 Jany. 1867.

"Dear Mr. Wilkinson,—I am sorry to hear that you are still lame, you surely take the best advice, there may be some small bone or leader injured, some clever person may detect ere it is too late. The "*present time*" you *know.* The mortgage you mention viz., the 12 acres of freehold land, the security must depend upon the erections thereon, whether they are of sufficient value, and the permanency of their present use, and whether they would be available for any other purpose equally profitable. Then with the joint security of the company you mention and their bond, there can be no doubt of their respectability. I think it would be an eligible security, and you

Digitized by Microsoft®

will please to give it your attention, on my account and strictest enquiry.

"And am, dear Sir, yours respectfully,

"JANE LYON."

"W. M. Wilkinson, Esq."

"You will be here to-morrow Daniel tells me; we dine at ½ past 5. I hope you will come to meet Dr. Mary Walker."

32. On Monday the 14th January, I went to dine with the Plaintiff and I took with me the draft assignment of the mortgage and the declaration of trust I left them with her for her approval I was there a quarter of an hour before any one else and we had the same sort of conversation as before and she said she would go through the drafts by herself and thought they might be deferred as she saw no reason for doing them at once I strongly advised her to do nothing further in it but to leave things as they were We had no further conversation on the subject that evening as I left early before the others had gone.

33. On the same day I wrote to the Plaintiff as follows:—

"44, Lincoln's Inn Fields, London, W. C.
"14th Jany. 1867.

"My dear Mrs. Lyon,—The land and the premises and other erections upon it are valued at £80,000, which I believe could not be so reduced as not to make a loan of £25,000 perfectly safe, without taking into account the personal security of the borrowers, upon their covenant jointly and severally to pay the whole of the mortgage money.

"I consider that the security therefore is ample; and if the title to the property should on investigation prove to be equally good, I do not think you will run any risk, whilst you will be materially increasing your income.

Digitized by Microsoft®

"When you have fully considered the matter, I shall be glad to have your directions,

"Yours faithfully,

"W. M. WILKINSON."

"Mrs. Lyon,
"17a, Albert Terrace."

34. On the date of the following letter it was brought to me by the Defendant Home who said that the Plaintiff wished to see me.

"17a, Albert Terrace, Albert Gate, Hyde Park,
"17 Jany. 1867.

"Dear Mr. Wilkinson,—Will you be so good as to call in my principal of £31,000 from the estate of the late Frederick Drew, Esq.?

"Yours very truly,

"JANE LYON."

"W. M. Wilkinson, Esq."

On the afternoon of that day I called on her and she produced the draft deeds I had left with her on the 14th and which she desired me to read over to her I did so and she approved of them and said she had determined now to carry out the gift I once more went through the arguments I had before addressed to her but she said she was determined now to do it, and desired me to have them ready for her to sign on Saturday.

The next morning I received from her the following letter:—

"17a, Albert Terrace, Albert Gate,
"Hyde Park,
"17th Jany. 1867.

"Dear Mr. Wilkinson,—I have examined the copy trust deed, to you, relating to the mortgage of £30,000; and also, the reservation gift deed copy, to Daniel, at my demise, and approve of both.

"And am, &c., &c.,

"JANE LYON."

The assignment of the mortgage to me as drawn and

Digitized by Microsoft®

approved by her was absolute on the face of it and I had it re-ingrossed with the alteration referring to the declaration of trust so that my character of trustee should appear Two of my clerks my son and Mr. Hartley called on her on the Saturday to see her sign the deeds and I afterwards signed in their presence I was not there myself and did not execute the deed till the Monday following.

35. The following is a copy of the deed:—

"DECLARATION OF TRUST.

"This Indenture made the 19th day of January One thousand eight hundred and sixty-seven between Jane Lyon of No. 17a Albert-terrace Albert-gate Hyde Park in the County of Middlesex widow of the one part and William Martin Wilkinson of 44 Lincoln's Inn-fields in the County of Middlesex gentleman of the other part Whereas by a deed poll or instrument in writing under the hand and seal of the said Jane Lyon bearing date the 12th day of December 1866 After reciting that under the last Will and testament of her late husband Charles Lyon Esquire the said Jane Lyon was entitled to a large fortune in money and securities for her own use free from any trusts or reservations imposed thereon by the said Will or otherwise And reciting that the said Jane Lyon had no children and had been minded and desirous to take and adopt Daniel Dunglas Home of 22 Sloane-street Hyde-park aforesaid as her son And reciting that with her sanction and at her request the said Daniel Dunglas Home had executed a deed poll bearing date the 3rd day of December then instant and the same was intended to be enrolled as of record in Her Majesty's High Court of Chancery whereby the said Daniel Dunglas Home declared that he had taken the surname of "Lyon" in lieu of and instead of "Home" and that in future he intended to be called and known as "Daniel Home Lyon" And reciting that the said Jane Lyon being desirous of placing

Digitized by Microsoft®

him in a position of independence suitable to his rank and position in life as her adopted son and with a view to that end on the 10th day of October then last gave to the said Daniel Home Lyon the sum of £24,000 cash and reciting that in further pursuance of such desire and on the occasion of his publicly taking her name on the 10th day of December then instant the said Jane Lyon had caused to be transferred from her own name in the books of the Governor and Company of the Bank of England into the old name of Daniel Home Lyon the sum of £6,798 17*s.* 4*d.* £3 per Cent. Consolidated Bank Annuities equivalent to a further sum of £6,000 cash and reciting that it was the intention of the said Jane Lyon in making the said respective gift and transfer as aforesaid and it was her then wish and intention absolutely and irrevocably to vest in the said Daniel Home Lyon for himself his executors administrators and assigns the absolute use and enjoyment of the moneys thereby respectively given and transferred The said Jane Lyon in further evidence of such her desire and intention and to remove all doubts suspicions and controversies in that behalf did by the deed poll now in recital for herself her heirs executors and administrators absolutely and irrevocably declare that she had made the said gift and transfer of her own will and pleasure and without any influence control or interference of the said Daniel Home Lyon or of any other person and that the said Daniel Home Lyon his executors administrators and assigns do stand possessed of and be entitled to the said sums of £24,000 and the said £3 per Cent. Consolidated Bank Annuities so representing the sum of £6,000 by her transferred as thereinbefore mentioned for his and their own absolute use and benefit without any reservation condition trust or purpose whatsoever And whereas the said Jane Lyon is entitled (among other property) to a sum of £30,000 secured on mortgage of certain leasehold land buildings machinery and hereditaments situate at . . . . in the county of York made by an indenture dated the 9th

Digitized by Microsoft®

day of January 1867 and expressed to be made between . . . . . of the one part and the said Jane Lyon of the other part And whereas the said Jane Lyon being minded and desirous to make a further provision for her said adopted son the said Daniel Home Lyon in addition to the said sums of £24,000 cash and £6,798 17*s.* 4*d.* £3 per Cent. Consolidated Bank Annuities so respectively paid and transferred to him as aforesaid has of her own free will and pleasure only and without any influence control or interference of the said Daniel Home Lyon or of any other person determined absolutely and irrevocably to settle the said sum of £30,000 secured on mortgage as aforesaid for the benefit of her adopted son the said Daniel Home Lyon reserving only to herself the interest of the same during her life with full power to her of calling in and varying the investments of the said sum And whereas for effectuating and in part performance of the said will and determination the said Jane Lyon has by an indenture bearing even date with but executed before these presents and expressed to be made between the said Jane Lyon of the one part and the said William Martin Wilkinson of the other part assigned the said principal sum of £30,000 and interest and the securities for the same to the said William Martin Wilkinson his executors administrators and assigns to the intent that he and they may stand possessed thereof respectively upon the trusts and with and subject to the powers and provisoes thereinafter declared Now this indenture witnesseth that for effectually carrying out the said determination and intent and in consideration of the premises it is hereby agreed and declared by and between the said parties hereto and in particular the said Jane Lyon doth hereby for herself her heirs executors and administrators absolutely and irrevocably declare that the said William Martin Wilkinson his executors administrators and assigns shall from the date of these presents stand possessed of and interested in the said sum of £30,000

Digitized by Microsoft®

and all interest now due or hereafter to accrue due for the same and the securities for the same Upon trust that he the said William Martin Wilkinson his executors administrators and assigns shall either continue the said sum of £30,000 in its present state of investment if the said Jane Lyon shall so desire or at her request shall call in and compel payment of the same sum or any part thereof and shall invest the moneys so called in as aforesaid in the names or name or under the legal control of him the said William Martin Wilkinson his executors administrators or assigns in any of the public stocks or funds or Government securities of the United Kingdom or freehold copyhold leasehold or chattel real securities or in the purchase of real or leasehold estate or in any other mode or form which the said Jane Lyon shall by writing under her hand from time to time direct and appoint it being the intent and meaning of the said Jane Lyon in making such assignment and settlement as aforesaid to retain to herself the exclusive control of the future investments of the said sum of £30,000 and every part thereof and that the said William Martin Wilkinson his executors administrators or assigns shall pay the interest dividends and annual income of the said sum of £30,000 and of the stocks funds and securities in or upon which the same sum or any part thereof may for the time being be invested and the rents and profits of the real estate which may be purchased therewith or with any part thereof unto the said Jane Lyon during her life and subject thereto shall stand possessed of and interested in the said sum of £30,000 and the stocks funds shares and securities in or upon which the same or any part thereof may from time to time be invested and the real estate which may be purchased with the said sum or any part thereof and the interest dividends and annual income rents and profits thereof and of every part thereof In trust for the said Daniel Home Lyon his heirs executors administrators and assigns according to the nature and tenure of the said property And it is hereby agreed and declared that the power of appointing a new

Digitized by Microsoft®

trustee or new trustees who shall die or desire to be discharged or refuse or become unfit or incapable to act shall be exercisable by the said Jane Lyon during her life and upon every or any such appointment the number of trustees may be augmented or reduced and in addition to the ordinary indemnity and right to reimbursement by law given to trustees the trustee or trustees for the time being of these presents shall not be answerable for any loss which may be occasioned to the said trust fund by investing the same in any manner which the said Jane Lyon may in her absolute discretion think fit to direct Provided also and the said Jane Lyon doth hereby expressly declare that the settlement hereinbefore expressed to be hereby made by her is absolute and irrevocable and shall in no wise be disputed or controverted by her heirs executors or administrators and that the sum of £30,000 therein and the stocks funds securities and estate that may be purchased with the said sum or any part thereof are (subject as aforesaid) freely and absolutely given to the said Daniel Home Lyon for his own use and benefit without any reservation condition or trust whatsoever and are intended by the said Jane Lyon to be in addition to and not in lieu of or substitution for the said sums of £24,000 and £6,798 17*s.* 4*d.* £3 per Cent. Consolidated Bank Annuities so respectively given paid and transferred to her said adopted son the said Daniel Home Lyon as aforesaid In witness whereof the said parties to these presents have hereunto set their hands and seals the day and year first above written.

"JANE LYON. W. M. WILKINSON.

Signed sealed and delivered by the within named Jane Lyon and William Martin Wilkinson in the presence of

WM. J. WILKINSON, WM. HARTLEY, } Clerks to W. M. Wilkinson.

Digitized by Microsoft®

36. Copies of the two deeds were sent to her with the following letter:—

"44, Lincoln's Inn Fields, London, W. C.
"2 January 1867.

"Dear Madam,—My father desires me to send you the accompanying copies of the documents you required on Saturday I hope you will find them all right.

"Yours faithfully,
"W. J. WILKINSON."

"Mrs. Lyon."

37. On the 24th January 1867 I directed the following letter to be written and sent to the Plaintiff:—

"44, Lincoln's Inn Fields, London, W. C.
"24 January, 1867.

"Dear Madam,—My father desires me to say that he is afraid his indisposition will prevent him accepting your kind invitation for Friday next.

"I return you the papers relating to the Wootton Estate which you sent me according to your request.

"Yours faithfully,
"WM. J. WILKINSON."

"Mrs. Lyon."

38. At her request I called on her on the 25th January with one of the duplicates of her Will and left it with her I was with her only a few minutes and do not remember what passed On the 13th February I went with her to the stockbrokers and to the Bank to sell out stock for the second mortgage of £30,000 She thought that she had only enough stock to produce about £26,500 and she had arranged that the Defendant Home should sell out of his stock and lend to her what was necessary I had accordingly got a power of attorney from him to the brokers to sell out and this was done by them and they raised £3,403 6*s.* 4*d.* cash by the sale of £3,755 7*s.* 8*d.* Consols which was advanced to her and £400 cash by sale of £441 7*s.* 7*d.* Consols for Mr. Home himself When at the Bank we discovered through the

Digitized by Microsoft®

brokers that the Plaintiff had a further sum left, in her own name of about £2,300 and she told me on going home that she would at once transfer it to the Defendant Home in reduction of what she had borrowed and which I believe she afterwards did.

39. The following are copies of further letters which have passed between myself and the Plaintiff:—

"17a, Albert Terrace. Albert Gate, S. W.
"13th Febry. '67.

"Dear Mr. Wilkinson,—Will you please let me know by return, *when* I shall receive the deeds of my new mortgage, being usual with my husband to receive the deeds when he paid the money, which I have done, and I wish to go to the bank, to deposit some other documents, which I mentioned to you, at the same time I deposit them. Will you please also, to send the papers of the *exact* amount I sold out of the funds, with price, &c. This is usual, we always had it from the bank, will you please procure it from Taylor and Fox.

"I hope you are much better, and am,

"Yours very truly,
"JANE LYON."

"W. M. Wilkinson, Esq."

"Daniel came home this afternoon quite well."

"P.S.—Also, if you have sold out from Daniel's, let me have that paper of exact amount also, if you have not, I would sell out the remainder of my stock as part, and not have so much of his.—J. L."

---

40. "44, Lincoln's Inn Fields, London, W. C.
"14 February, 1867.

"Dear Mrs. Lyon,—The mortgage deed requires to be registered at Northallerton, and immediately on its return, which will be about a week, I will bring it to you. I shall have a copy made for you I hope by Saturday.

"The amount of stock you sold yesterday was £29,348

Digitized by Microsoft®

2*s.* 9*d.*, which produced £26,596 13*s.* 8*d.*, for which sum I received the broker's cheque yesterday.

"Mr. D. H. Lyon's stock was sold yesterday to make up the sum of £30,000, which I also received.

"I will get the broker's note of the amount for you, and you can when convenient replace his stock, and pay him the dividend of July next, in case it should not be earlier replaced.

"It will thus be simply a loan of stock for a short time.

"I am much better to-day.

"Yours faithfy.,

"W. M. WILKINSON."

"Mrs. Lyon."

---

41. "44, Lincoln's Inn Fields, London, W. C.
"21 February, 1867.

"My Dear Mrs. Lyon,—I send you the last mortgage deed for £30,000, and also an examined copy, which I hope you will find correct.

"Yours faithfully,

"W. M. WILKINSON,

"per W. J. W."

"Mrs. Lyon,
"Albert Gate."

42. The manner in which the Plaintiff had disposed of her property had always been an uneasy thought for me and I determined to bring the question again before her and accordingly wrote her the following letter;—

"44, Lincoln's Inn Fields, London, W. C.
"6 May, 1867.

"My dear Mrs. Lyon,—I am just beginning to get here again a little after my long illness, and am sorry that I have been so long without being able to call on you.

"I have for some time been intending to remind you of the terms of your Will, which has now been made for some time, and you have had an opportunity in the in-

Digitized by Microsoft®

terim of fully considering whether you would not wish to benefit some of your own or your late husband's relatives by making an alteration in their favour.

"I have no right of course to do more than bring the matter to your notice, for of course the decision must rest with you alone, and I will therefore say no more than that I can now attend to any directions you may give me on the subject.

"Yours very faithfy,

"W. M. WILKINSON."

"Mrs. Lyon.

"17a, Albert Terrace, Hyde Park."

43. The following is a copy of her answer:—

"17a, Albert Terrace, Albert Gate,

"6th May, '67.

"My dear Mr. Wilkinson,—I most sincerely congratulate you upon, I hope, your restoration to permanent health, and a good long life to enjoy it, and your dear good wife; I also wish her much joy upon that anticipation. May you both together reap the benefits of that happy change, for health is most assuredly the greatest blessing this world can grant. Have you heard any thing from the Wootton Mortgage? Will you please give me a copy of your notice, for them to pay in the money? I hope it will answer the purpose. Have you got a security for it *good* to pay 5 pr. ct.? Mr. Jencken mentioned one that Spratt mentioned to Daniel, probably he named it to you, paying 6 pr. ct., that was for twenty thousand. I hope you will find another good one, equal to the last, or *better*. I should like to see you, when you can; if you please, bring the copy notice with you, and am, with best wishes for your health,

"Yours very truly,

"JANE LYON."

"Will you please give me some intimation when you will be here, as I wish to be in the house; and this fine weather I might be out after one o'clock, or if not con-

Digitized by Microsoft®

venient to call please write. I have had a letter from poor Dan., and think he is rather better, not so much pain: he is now taking wine. I think there is hopes of his recovery.

"J. LYON."

44. I afterwards received from the Plaintiff a letter of which the following is a copy:—

"17a, Albert Terrace, Albert Gate, Hyde Park,
"10th May, 1867.

"Dear Sir,—Not having heard from you, in answer to my last, *requesting* the copy of the notice you sent respecting the Wootton Mortgage, (it has always been usual with my husband and self to *have* such copy notice) I have requested Daniel to desire you to send or give it to him for me, but I suppose he forgot it. As the payment of the interest was a *private* transaction, probably a different notice may have to be given. If yours is not in conformity with the deeds, this must be done *at once*, *May* and *October* were the months the interest was paid usually; *not* January and July, as last entered upon.

"And am yours truly,
"JANE LYON."

"W. M. Wilkinson, Esq."

45. On Saturday the 11th May I called on her to speak to her about her Will and the calling in of the Wootton Mortgage &c. I found her alone and after speaking a little on the other matters I opened the question of her Will and told her that as Mr. Home had now had such a benefit from her I wished to bring very seriously before her that she should not exclude her relations by her Will She said that she was just as well satisfied with him as ever and that nothing could surpass his kindness to her All that she feared was that he would not live long and if he died she would alter her Will for she did not wish that any more of her money should go to his little boy whom she did not like "Indeed," she said,

Digitized by Microsoft®

"I am sorry that I gave him more than a life contingency in the second £30,000 for I think the first £30,000 quite enough to go to the boy." I said "Well, I am sorry if you have changed your mind, for I did all I could to make you hesitate, and I am sorry that you ever gave him the second gift at all. But now," I said to her "why don't you make your Will in favour of your relations? If Mrs. Clutterbuck does not want it, there is Mrs. Denison, who, with her husband incapacitated, and her large family really wants it. Besides you have given Daniel more than he can ever want." She thought for a moment and said "No, I don't care for them, and neither did my husband, and I will not alter it as long as Daniel lives; but if he die, I will alter it, for I don't wish his son to have any more. And why should I change? I am perfectly satisfied so long as he lives." I again pressed her to leave a part to her husband's relatives and if not to some hospitals as it was absurd to leave so much to one person and I said "I wish you would do it, for I think it is only just." She positively refused and said her mind was made up I said to her "Well, I only wish your relatives could have been within hearing of all I have said to you, that they might know how earnestly I have pleaded for them, and I am sorry to say how unsuccessfully" We parted on the best terms and I made the following memorandum of the interview.

"Saturday, 11 May, 1867.

Mrs. Lyon,—Attending you as to altering your Will, which you determined not to do, or to take anything away during Mr. Lyon's life; but should he predecease you, you would at once make a fresh will.

46. The following correspondence then took place:—

"17a, Albert Terrace, Albert Gate,
"27th May, '67.

"Dear Mr. Wilkinson,—You promised, when here, to write respecting the notice, and when they would be ready, to pay the mortgage off, and drop me a line as soon as

Digitized by Microsoft®

you received an answer. Will you please let me know the reply.

"And am, dear Sir, yours truly,

"JANE LYON."

---

47. "44, Lincoln's Inn Fields, London, W. C.

"28th May, 1867.

"My dear Mrs. Lyon,—I wrote to the Solicitors, Messrs. Warden and Ponsford the day after I saw you, and not having received any answer from them, I wrote them again yesterday urging them to let me know if they could promise the money on the day as you were about making arrangements for its investment.

"I have not yet received any answer, but the moment I do so, I will let you know.

"I should have called on you long before this, but I have been again unwell, and obliged to save myself as much exertion as possible.

"I shall hope to see you in a day or two.

"Yours very truly,

"W. M. WILKINSON."

"Mrs. Lyon."

---

48. "My dear Sir,—I am sorry to find by yours that you have been ill again, I think you require change of air. I am much surprised you do not hear from Ward and Ponsford; I fear I am going to have some trouble in that quarter, I have all the deeds belonging the estate at the bank; will you please, when you come here, to bring me the deeds belonging to the last mortgage, I have only the *mortgage deed* to me, and cannot take it to the bank until I have the deeds of the property in mortgage as it is usual to have, it is not complete without. In a 2nd

Digitized by Microsoft®

mortgage, they have copies of them. I have neither. I have had a good account of Daniel.

"And am yours respectfully,

"JANE LYON."

"W. M. Wilkinson, Esq.
"44, Lincoln's Inn Fields, W. C.
"Wednesday, 29th May, '67."

---

49. "44, Lincoln's Inn Fields, London, W. C.
"7th June, 1867.

"My dear Mrs. Lyon,—I have now heard from Messrs. Warden and Ponsford in answer to my letters, and they say that they have not yet obtained the money to pay you off, but they are still trying to get it.

"There is no doubt they find it a more difficult task than they anticipated.

"I will bring with me the first day I can call, the other deeds relating to your mortgage in the North.

"I have been worse again in health lately, or I would have brought them before now.

"Yours very truly,

"W. M. WILKINSON."

"Mrs. Lyon."

---

50. "17a, Albert Terrace, Albert Gate, Hyde Park,
"11th June 1867.

"Dear Sir,—I am sorry to hear that you have been ill again, but hope now you are quite well, when you come with the deeds you name, will you also please to bring my Mortgage deed and Trust to Dan. I wish to see them again compared with my copies; I fear I shall have some difficulty with the Wootton Estate Mortgage, I wrote to Mr. Good, he thinks they will get the money, but not *so soon* as anticipated, will you please appoint *Thursday* first, to bring the above deed, mentioned, or a day probably more convenient to you, say Friday.

"And am, dear Sir, yours truly,

"JANE LYON."

"W. M. Wilkinson, Esqr."

Digitized by Microsoft®

"44, Lincoln's Inn Fields, London, W. C.
"12th June, 1867.

"My dear Mrs. Lyon,—I shall try to call on you at 2 o'clock to-morrow (Thursday) or the same hour on Friday, if not inconvenient to you.

"Yours very truly,
"W. M. WILKINSON."

"Mrs. Lyon."

51. The next and last time I saw the Plaintiff was on the 13th June when I found her in a very excited state She said I ought to have advised her to have another solicitor and to put off giving away the mortgage and when I told her I had done so she denied it and said she should try to get the mortgage deed back I told her I was sorry she had ever given it at all and it was quite against my wishes and advice and if Mr. Home had deceived her as she said she had most effectually concealed it from me and that I could not believe she had been acting a part with me for so many months for no reason at all The following is the memorandum I made immediately on my return.

"13th June, 1867.

"I called on Mrs. Lyon with the deeds belonging to her, and she complained that I had not brought the trust deed to compare with her copy. I informed her that hers was an examined copy. She said she was determined to have it back, as she had been defrauded of it by Mr. Lyon and had not had proper advice from me. That I ought to have asked her to have another Solicitor or to have insisted on her delaying for 6 months. I referred to my having written to her repeatedly and also spoken to her against doing it at all, and that I could not prevent her doing what she did. She said she had done it under the influence of Mr. Home in everything, and I said that if so she had concealed it from me. She said she was determined to set aside the deed, and was saying she would go into Chancery with it, when a gentleman and lady called, and she said that the interview had better terminate.

Digitized by Microsoft®

52. The next day I resigned my trusteeship in the following letter :—

"44, Lincoln's Inn Fields, London, W. C.
"14th June, 1867.

"Mr. Wilkinson presents his compliments to Mrs. Lyon, and begs to say that as Mrs. Lyon named him as trustee of the £30,000 mortgage, and she is now dissatisfied with what she did, he is desirous of retiring altogether from the trusteeship.

"Mrs. Lyon has the power of nominating another trustee.

"Mr. Wilkinson throughout considered the further gift unnecessary, and has always been sorry that Mrs. Lyon persisted in making it."

53. I have since deposited in Court the mortgage and the assignment and declaration of trust and the deeds relating to the mortgage and also the mortgage for £20,000 to Mr. Home so that I have no further interest therein and I am willing to assign the first-mentioned mortgage to a trustee to be appointed and I submit I ought to be discharged from the suit I have not been paid either by the Plaintiff or the other Defendant for any of the business I have transacted for them.

54. I have now gone through the only letters and papers which have passed on the subject and I have given as nearly as I could a true account of the material parts of my interviews with the Plaintiff She was always till the last occasion very kind to me and I had a respect and liking for her and a determination to do all I could to protect her more against her own absurdly generous impulses than against Mr. Home for she assured me repeatedly that she was not influenced in any way by spirit communications but only by her liking for him and that if he were not a medium at all she should have the same affection for him It it were otherwise she is alone to blame for concealing it from me and constantly denying it but I spoke to her so often against being led away by communications

Digitized by Microsoft®

that the subject got quite threadbare between us and she from the first told me that she was well acquainted with all that I could say on that subject and she afterwards told me on several occasions she had received the same caution from others She was principally anxious to have all she did for Mr. Home done in such a manner as that her husband's relatives could not dispute it after her death and she informed me she could have no next of kin of her own and that her property "would go the Crown" if she did not make a Will and her only anxiety was as to Mr. Home's health and the fear lest he might marry and leave her The first evening I saw her she said in the presence of Mr. Rudall after Dr. Hawkesley had left that Mr. Home had told her he must go to Russia to look after a law suit he had pending there respecting his late wife's fortune and she said that now she had given him so much there would be no occasion for him to go away and he need not care whether he got the money in Russia or not as he had now enough of his own and she had plenty more.

55. On one occasion she shewed me a letter from a lady in which it was said that her husband's relatives were gathering evidence on which to prove her insane and she expressed great indignation against them She also told me she had left her last lodgings in Westbourne-street because she suspected Mrs. Fellowes and others of being in league with the landlady Mrs. Keys to get evidence of her insanity.

56. I have reason to complain of such allegations being made against me as that I did not advise her to employ another solicitor nor fully cautioned her against giving away her money as they are contrary to the fact and are expressly contradicted in her own handwriting which I suppose she has forgotten I did both to the best of my ability and almost if possible beyond my duty by my persistence against her repeated declarations of her intention Her own statements that she acted on her own judgment only and not on any communications and that her deter-

Digitized by Microsoft®

mination was to do as she said were if they were not true her fault and not mine for I quite believed what she told me I have given her the same advice both when by ourselves and in the presence of the Defendant Home and on such occasions he has always said the same to her I could have done nothing more than I did except refusing altogether to carry out her strict orders and had I done so and she had gone to another solicitor and had told him the same as she told me he would have had no alternative but to act on her instructions.

57. The Plaintiff has repeatedly told me that she acted altogether on her own judgment in what she was doing and that it was the greatest pleasure to her to have made such an use of her money and to have found one who was such a comfort to her.

58. The foregoing 57 paragraphs have been repeated with a few slight alterations from my affidavit filed in this suit on the 8th July 1867 After my said affidavit up to this place was prepared and printed I was furnished with the copy of the Plaintiff's further affidavit sworn the 26th June and filed the following day.

So far as it relates to matters within my own knowledge it is almost wholly untrue and is at variance with the facts or with her own previous and repeated statements to me and what there is true in it is so mixed up with what is not so as to give an entirely false colouring to her statements From my conversations with her during the nine or ten occasions on which I had interviews with her of a business or a friendly nature I always considered her to have an excellent memory and good business habits and knowledge beyond those of most women but from this affidavit not only must her memory be most defective but her imagination must be very great if she herself really believes what she has said in it.

59. I was the friend of the Defendant Home though I seldom saw him but I was scarcely his solicitor for he had no law business on which to employ a solicitor and though

Digitized by Microsoft®

I had made a short will for him I made no charge for it I have always found him a person of honour and integrity and when I heard that he had been adopted by the Plaintiff and that she had given him £24,000 I was glad of it as a compensation for the unmerited abuse to which he has been subjected When however that munificent gift had been made to him I thought it was enough for all purposes and any further gifts I considered quite unnecessary This made me very independent in advising her and very determined that she should do nothing more for him upon my advice I never told Mr. Home or any other person what I intended to do in the way of questioning her when I took her Will but I questioned her in the strictest way and received the most determined answers from her expressing her satisfaction and her determination to make her Will in his favour and for the reasons which she gave me for so doing as I have above set out There was no halting or hesitation on her part in her answers to awaken my suspicions or make me think she was not speaking the truth I knew nothing of the circumstances she now alleges under which she first wrote to me and made her first gift to the Defendant and if she had at the time she signed her Will the conviction that she was influenced by any spiritual cause she not only concealed it from me but resolutely denied it and gave as her reason that she did it out of her liking for Mr. Home and to make him independent.

60. It is incorrect also that she destroyed her former Will after making that of the 12th of November last for she told me pointing to the fire that she had destroyed it that afternoon shortly before I came.

61. It is also entirely incorrect what she now alleges in paragraph 11 of her lastly-mentioned affidavit as to the gift of £6,000 and the circumstances under which she made it as appears by the correspondence and documents in the preceding 8th, 9th, 10th, 11th and 12th paragraphs of this Answer She herself originated the correspondence

Digitized by Microsoft®

with me respecting it and says in her first letter that she makes the gift "as a little surprise" to the Defendant on the occasion of the Defendant taking her name which he did publicly and advertised it in the "Times" "Post" and other papers and she told me at the time of her having got the papers containing the announcement It is also untrue that any but the Plaintiff herself gave the instructions to the brokers The letter to them is in the Plaintiff's own hand The Defendant's birthday is not in December but on the 20th March The following is a copy of a letter in the handwriting of the Plaintiff addressed and sent by her to the Defendant Home the day before his birthday:—

"19th March, 1867.

" My dear Daniel,—You say your birthday is the 20th, *i. e., to-morrow,* may you see *many* of them, and may they be *happy* days, *full* of *health* and *joy;* look forward to see my *words verified,* for I write with thought and pen of *inspiration:* your *health* will flourish like the *young bay tree,* full of *life* and sap. I will never see those far days, but you will *remember* my *prophetic* prognostication herein. I am glad you sleep well, and your cough is much better, you will all be well together *very soon. think of that only.* The weather here is most thoroughly miserable, snowing one hour, sleeting the next; cold and comfortless; we never see the colours of the sky, it is so black. My cold no better, no getting out, no change for me, the sooner I am off to the sunshine land, *if such,* the better. You say that 50 miles from here the ground is covered with snow 2 and 3 feet thick, but you do not say whether *east* or *west,* this you will say in your next.

" God bless and protect and restore you to *perfect health,* and may your birth day of '68 be more auspicious.

" And am, my dear Daniel,

" Your very affectionate mother,

" JANE LYON."

62. What she says in paragraph 12 of her lastly-

Digitized by Microsoft®

mentioned Affidavit is also incorrect as to the time when the deed poll as to the two gifts of £24,000 and £6,000 was executed The correspondence with her and my account of my interviews with her in the preceding 8th to the 12th paragraphs of this Answer clearly prove the time of its execution and the circumstances under which it was prepared and it is untrue that I received any instructions excepting from her It is also untrue if she then spoke the truth to me that she made the gifts or executed the deed under any spiritual or improper fancies or influence and although she had no other Solicitor but me on that occasion her letter shews that it was because she refused to act on my advice to employ one I submit that she should have been more cautious before making such statements so derogatory to my character as that I had taken instructions for such a deed from any one but herself and had given it a false date whilst acting as the Solicitor of the Defendant instead of her who was really my client.

63. The circumstances erroneously stated in the 13th paragraph of the Plaintiff's lastly-mentioned affidavit relative to the first mortgage for £30,000 and her gift of it to the Defendant are sufficiently explained and many of them distinctly refuted by the correspondence and documents I have already given and they are directly at variance with the facts in several important particulars as the correspondence and documents prove If she executed the gift of the mortgage under the influence she mentions she falsely stated the contrary to me at the time and acted in defiance of my warnings.

64. It is incorrect that the deficiency to make up the second mortgage was advanced by the Defendant Home at my request The mortgage was to have been for £25,000 only for which she had money enough of her own ready and I strongly advised her not to lend more as it would be a pity to leave herself without any capital sum but she so insisted that she disliked uneven sums and would prefer £30,000 if the security were sufficient that

Digitized by Microsoft®

afterwards on the parties applying that the larger sum might be advanced she asked Mr. Home herself in my presence to let her have the balance out of his stock which he did.

65. The circumstances relating to the sale of the Defendant's stock to provide for the £20,000 mortgage to him are also incorrectly stated so far as they give the impression that she only knew of that mortgage by accident The first idea of it was given by herself to me and she was throughout not only aware of it but desired it to be lent and she inquired the nature of the security and knew of its being accepted and so far from her discovering it from the sale note being left accidentally with her not only that sale note but the notes of the previous transactions in the stock by the Defendant, and the coupons of the stock were in her own possession, and she kept them in the same bundle as her own She has several times shewn them to me along with her own when I was with her assisting her to calculate what she had in the funds and she told me that she kept them as Mr. Home did not understand such matters as well as she did I find that in a letter from the plaintiff to the other Defendant of the 15th October last she says "I enclose you the papers of your fund security. You will be sure not to lose it, and when you have shown it to your friend Dr. Gully some other time when you return I can have to take care of for you." Her property amounted to about £140,000 before she gave part of it to the Defendant.

66. If it be true as the Plaintiff states that she had no affection or even respect for the Defendant apart from the peculiar phenomena which occur in his presence she has repeatedly and consistently assured me to the exact contrary and she has also written to the contrary in the above correspondence And I prefer to believe and do believe what she then told me and my own observation of her affectionate conduct to him to what she now says The Defendant whose health is very delicate left London for Brighton and Malvern on the 12th October and re-

Digitized by Microsoft®

turned on the 1st of November He again left London the end of January for Hastings and stayed there till the 13th February He left London again for Torquay about the 10th March and stayed there till the 22nd of April and he left London for Malvern on the 1st of May and stayed there till the 9th of June last.

67. I believe that the Plaintiff is a widow lady Except as I am informed by her affidavit filed in this suit on the 15th June 1867 and from her correspondence and behaviour as hereinbefore appearing I cannot set forth as to my belief or otherwise whether she is between sixty and seventy years or of what age she is She has apparently not outlived the caprices of her sex She informed me and I believe that she has about £140,000 invested in the funds and upon mortgages.

68. The Defendant Home is a person of very delicate constitution and extremely nervous sensibility He has been I believe all his life subject to the occasional occurrence of peculiar phenomena in his presence Such phenomena have been carefully observed by several of the most powerful sovereigns of Europe and by persons of eminence in the leading professions and in literature and science and by practical men of business under conditions when anything like fraud or contrivance were impossible Various theories have been suggested by way of explanation connected with the abstrusest problems in biology and metaphysics My own views on this subject are probably unimportant but as charges and insinuations are made against me and the subject of Spiritualism is so misunderstood by the public I have the right to say that having had my attention drawn to certain remarkable occurrences about eighteen years ago in the house of a relative and which continued for nearly twelve years I have since that time occupied a portion of my leisure in inquiring into the subject and in arranging the various phenomena and comparing them with historical statements of similar occurrences I have very seldom been at any

Digitized by Microsoft®

séances and that not for many years having entirely satisfied myself years ago of the truth of most of the phenomena that is of their actual happening and I have at the same time and for many years formed and constantly expressed the opinion that it was wrong to believe in or act upon what might appear to be communications from the unseen on their own evidence merely I have invariably inculcated that no such communication should be received as of so much value as if it were told by a friend in this world inasmuch as you know something of your friend here and cannot know the identity or origin of the communicant I have frequently referred to the passage in the Old Testament in which it is said that God sent a lying spirit and to the directions given us in the New Testament to try or test the spirits I have pursued the enquiry under great misrepresentations and obloquy and I intend to continue it as long as I can and I believe that the subjects of spiritual visions trances ecstacies prophecies angelic protection and diabolic possession anciently recorded have already had light thrown upon them and will have much more I submit that I have a right to pursue an enquiry into psychological laws without being subjected to ridicule or abuse and that the proof of supernatural occurrences is valuable in both a scientific and religious point of view The mere physical phenomena which the public erroneously fancies to be the whole of Spiritualism and which of course afford room for spurious imitation and fraud are in my belief the most unimportant part of the subject and have not for years engaged my attention. In this inquiry are also many persons of all the professions and of the highest literary and scientific attainments.

69. The Plaintiff told me that she was and I am informed and believe that she still is greatly interested in this enquiry although it appears she has conceived a dislike to the Defendant Home and has been as I am informed and believe induced by others to charge him with

Digitized by Microsoft®

imposition in order to get back the money The Plaintiff told me that she was subject to supernatural occurrences herself and she told me some most interesting anecdotes of what had happened to her.

70. The Defendant Home has I believe always stated and I believe that he has no control over such phenomena that he is perfectly passive when they occur and does not consciously exercise any volition He has I believe and so far as I know always repudiated the notion that he possessed any power whatever of evoking the spirits of deceased persons or of putting other persons in communication with them.

71. The said Defendant connects some of the phenomena which I have mentioned with such communications as aforesaid and in so far as such phenomena or communications occur to him more often and in more marked degree than to the majority of persons as I believe from his bodily organization but not further or otherwise he describes himself as a spiritual medium.

72. I have been informed and believe that the said Defendant is entitled to considerable property in Russia being the fortune of his late wife and has some small private means besides and that he does not practise any profession or business And save as aforesaid and his being a highly accomplished gentleman I cannot say what if anything he calls himself or by what means if any he gains his living.

73. I am unable to set forth as to my belief or otherwise whether or not the Plaintiff was greatly attached to her late husband or how otherwise or whether or not she heard that she could be placed in communication with his spirit through the agency of a spiritual medium or how otherwise I have been informed and believe that of her own motion she did seek for and obtain an interview with the Defendant Home on or about the 2nd October 1866 at Sloane-street in the said Bill mentioned.

74. The Plaintiff has always repeatedly and invariably

Digitized by Microsoft®

assured me that in her adoption of the said Defendant and the presents which she has made him she was in nowise influenced by any spiritual communications whatever but acted spontaneously as she wished and the said other Defendant denies the charge made in the Plaintiff's Bill of Complaint and save as aforesaid I am unable to set forth as to my belief or otherwise whether or not the Defendant Home by any or what means induced her to believe or whether she did believe that a "manifestation" of the spirit of her deceased husband took or was taking place or whether or not through the instrumentality of the said Defendant or how otherwise or whether or not the said Defendant on that occasion induced the Plaintiff to believe or whether or not she did believe that the spirit of her deceased husband was in communication with her or whether or not that certain expressions of endearment or some other or what expressions on the part of the spirit were conveyed through the medium of the Defendant Home to her or how otherwise or whether or not the Plaintiff was much or in fact gratified thereby or whether or not she desired the said Defendant to call upon her or whether or not on the following day or whether or not she promised to give him £10 or some other or what sum or how otherwise or whether or not the said Defendant accordingly or in fact called upon the Plaintiff or whether or not at her residence is the said Bill mentioned or at some other or what place on the following or on some other or what day or whether or not he did or whether or not again induce the Plaintiff to believe or whether or not she did believe that the spirit of her deceased husband was manifested to her through the instrumentality of the said Defendant or how otherwise or whether or not she thereupon or in fact gave the said Defendant the sum of £30 or some other or what sum or how otherwise or whether or not the Plaintiff on the following day or on some other or what day or whether or not under the belief that the spirit of her deceased husband had or whether or not again through the agency of the said Defendant been

Digitized by Microsoft®

brought into communication with her or for some other or what reason give the said Defendant the further sum of £50 or some other or what sum or how otherwise.

75. From the statements made to me by the Plaintiff from time to time as hereinbefore mentioned I believe that the Defendant Home did not by the means in the said Bill mentioned or by any other means acquire a great or any ascendancy over the mind of the Plaintiff who has a strong will of her own and is not likely to yield such an ascendancy over her to any one and I believe that the said Defendant did not by the exercise of his alleged spiritual powers or in fact induce her to believe that what the Plaintiff now alleges he represented to be communications from the spirit of her deceased husband to her were real communications But on the contrary she always assured me that she was attached to the said Defendant for his own sake as she might well be wholly apart from any such phenomena or communications.

76. From the Plaintiff's own statement I believe that she has no child.

77. I am unable to set forth as to my belief or otherwise whether a meeting or another meeting took place between the Plaintiff and the Defendant Home a day or two after the last alleged meeting or in fact or save as appears from her own statements to the contrary and the other Defendant's denial of her present statements whether or not the said Defendant at such alleged or any meeting alleged or represented to the Plaintiff or induced her to believe or she did believe that the spirit of her deceased husband required her to adopt the said Defendant as her son or to place him in a position of independence suitable to his rank and position in life as her adopted son nor can I set forth as to my belief or otherwise what was the allegation and representation if any made by the said Defendant to the Plaintiff on that alleged occasion or whether or not the said Defendant at the same time alleged or whether or not represented to the Plaintiff or whether or not induced her to believe or whether or not

Digitized by Microsoft®

she did believe that the spirit of her deceased husband desired that Mr. Hall (in the said Bill named) should be sent for or what allegation or representation if any was then made by the said Defendant to the Plaintiff respecting the said Mr. Hall.

78. I believe that the said Mr. Hall was a friend of the Defendant Home. The Plaintiff has informed me and therefore I believe that she sent for the said Mr. Hall because she wanted some friend of the said Defendant's to talk with her about her adoption of him as her son and whether the mere adoption of him would confer legal rights to property and so forth and that the said Mr. Hall was accordingly but not otherwise sent for and that a meeting took place between him and the Plaintiff the Defendant Home not being present.

79. Save from the Plaintiff's denial as aforesaid of her having been under any spiritual influence and the Defendant's denial of her present statements I am unable as to my belief or otherwise to set forth whether the said last named Defendant and the said Mr. Hall or one or which of them at such meeting or at some other or what meeting alleged or whether or not represented to the Plaintiff or whether or not induced her to believe or whether or not she did believe that the spirit of her deceased husband required her to produce her stock receipts or some or one or which of them or whether or not to go to the Bank of England or whether or not transfer stock equivalent in value to £24.000 sterling or to some other or what amount to the said Defendant or whether or not to sell the same and give him the proceeds or whether or not as a provision by the Plaintiff for him or whether or not as her adopted son or what was the allegation or representation if any then made by the said Defendant and the said Mr. Hall or by one or which of them to the Plaintiff or whether or not the Plaintiff or whether or not accordingly or whether or not in the full conviction and belief that she was fulfilling the wishes of her deceased husband

Digitized by Microsoft®

communicated to her through the medium of the Defendant Home or for some other or what reason went on or about the 10th October 1866 to the Bank of England or whether or not with the said Defendant or some other or what persons or person or whether or not the Plaintiff signed a book there or how otherwise or whether or not a large or some or what sum of Bank £3 per Cent. Consolidated Annuities or whether or not belonging to the Plaintiff was sold or transferred or whether or not the proceeds thereof or of any or what part thereof or whether or not amounting to £24,000 sterling or to some other or what sum were received by the said Defendant The Plaintiff informed me and I believed that she spontaneously gave the said Defendant a sum of £24,000 sterling because she wished to make him independent and to prevent his having to go to Russia to look after his property there but she never mentioned a word about her husband but always assured me she acted entirely of her own accord and of her own will and judgment and that she had never laid out any money which gave so much pleasure and happiness and that whatever happened the sum was unimportant to her. The following is a copy of her letter written to the other Defendant on the occasion :—

"18, Westbourne Place, Hyde Park,
"10th October, 1866.

"My dear Mr. Home,—I have a desire to render you *independent* of the world, and having *ample* means for the purpose without abstracting from any needs or *comforts* of my own, I have the greatest satisfaction in now presenting you with it as an *entirely* FREE GIFT from me, the sum of £24,000, and am,

"My dear Sir,
"Yours very truly & *respectfully*,
"JANE LYON."

"To D. D. Home, Esqr.
22, Sloane Street."

80. Save as aforesaid I am unable to set forth as to my

Digitized by Microsoft®

belief or otherwise whether or not the whole or any part of the said sum of £24,000 was obtained by the Defendant Home from the Plaintiff through the alleged ascendancy or power which the Plaintiff now alleges he had acquired over her mind by the means in the said Bill mentioned.

81. Save as aforesaid I am unable to set forth as to my belief or otherwise whether the Plaintiff or whether or not shortly after the said sums of £24,000 had been given by the Plaintiff to the Defendant Home or as the Plaintiff now alleges had been obtained by the said Defendant from the Plaintiff by the means and under the circumstances in her said Bill stated or in fact had a meeting or another meeting or interview with the said last named Defendant or how otherwise or whether or not the said Defendant at such meeting or interview alleged or represented to the Plaintiff or whether or not induced her to believe or whether or not she did believe that she was required by the spirit of her late husband to destroy the Will she had then made or whether or not to make another Will in favour of the said Defendant or what was the allegation or representation if any then made by the said Defendant to the Plaintiff or whether or not the said last named Defendant represented to the Plaintiff or whether or not induced her to believe or whether or not she did believe that the spirit of her said husband dictated the terms of such new Will under which he the said Defendant was to be universal legatee of all the Plaintiff's property or whether or not also that Dr. Hawksley and Mr. Rudall in the said Bill respectively named were to be sent for to attest the execution of such new Will or whether or not that the spirit of the Plaintiff's said late husband also dictated the terms of the letters to be written to the said Dr. Hawksley and Mr. Rudall asking them to attest the said Will or what were the allegations or representations if any then made by the said Defendant to the Plaintiff Both the said Dr. Hawksley and Mr. Rudall were friends of the Defendant Home.

Digitized by Microsoft®

82. A Will purporting to be the Will of the Plaintiff was prepared by me for the Plaintiff at her request in the manner and under the circumstances hereinbefore mentioned and not otherwise I had nothing to do with Defendant Home in the matter nor would I have accepted any instructions from him The said Defendant was under such Will named as the universal legatee of all the Plaintiff's property and such Will was executed by the Plaintiff on the 12th of November 1866 in the presence of and attested by the said Dr. Hawksley, Mr. Rudall and myself Neither the Defendant Home nor any one else was present on the occasion except the Plaintiff The descriptions of the attesting witnesses are given in their affidavits already filed in this suit The said Thomas Hawksley is a doctor of medicine residing at number 70 Brook-street Hanover-square in the county of Middlesex and the said Henry Alexander Rudall is a merchant carrying on business at numbers 8 and 9 Great Tower-street in the city of London Save from the Plaintiff's and the other Defendant's statements to the contrary I am unable to set forth as to my belief or otherwise whether the said Will was in fact executed by the Plaintiff at the instigation suggestion or desire of the Defendant Home or was so executed while the Plaintiff was under the influence of the ascendancy and power which the Plaintiff now alleges he had acquired over her mind by the means and under the circumstances in the said Bill stated.

83. I have been informed and believe that the Defendant Home did on or about the 5th November 1866 at the Plaintiff's request invest the sum of £23,913 17*s.* 3*d.* or thereabouts being the said sum of £24,000 less brokerage which the Plaintiff now alleges was obtained from the Plaintiff as in the said Bill mentioned in the purchase in his then name of Daniel Dunglass Home in the sum of £26,756 15*s.* 5*d* or thereabouts of £3 per Cent. Consolidated Bank Annuities.

84. The Defendant Home did on or about the 3rd

Digitized by Microsoft®

December 1866 and at the Plaintiff's request execute a deed poll of that date Such deed has since been at the Plaintiff's request and in fact enrolled as of record in Her Majesty's Court of Chancery and the said defendant thereby declared that he had taken the name of Lyon in lieu of and instead of Home and that in future he intended to be called and known as Daniel Home Lyon and she ordered a frame in which to have it hung up in her room.

85. I have hereinbefore and especially in the 8th to the 12th paragraphs both inclusive of this my Answer and in the 61st and 62nd paragraphs set forth all the facts and correspondence with which I am acquainted relating to the gift of £6,000 cash from the Plaintiff to the said Defendant and save as herein appears and from the Plaintiff's former denial as aforesaid and the Defendant's denial of her present statements I am unable to set forth as to my belief or otherwise whether the Plaintiff on the 10th of December 1866 or at some other or what time or whether or not at the request or suggestion of the Defendant Home, or whether or not while under the influence of the alleged ascendancy and power which the Plaintiff now alleges he had by the means in the said Bill mentioned or in fact acquired over her mind or by some other or what means induced by the said Defendant to go again with him to the Bank of England or whether or not to transfer the sum of £6,798 17*s.* 4*d.* or some other or what sum of £3 per Cent. Consolidated Bank Annuities into the name of the said Defendant as Daniel Dunglass Home that being the name in which the aforesaid sum of £26,756 15*s.* 3*d.* like annuities was then standing having been invested as aforesaid prior to his change of name I believe that such sum of £6,798 17*s.* 4*d.* Bank Annuities was then equivalent in value to a sum of £6,000 sterling or thereabouts.

86. Such deed poll or instrument in writing as in the said Bill is mentioned to bear date the 12th December

Digitized by Microsoft®

1866 and is therein stated to be of or to the purport and effect in the 11th paragraph of the said Bill set forth so far as the same is therein set forth being the same instrument as is set forth verbatim in the 12th paragraph of this my Answer was in fact duly and under the circumstances hereinbefore mentioned executed by the Plaintiff.

87. The said deed poll was prepared by me as the Solicitor for and at the request of the Plaintiff alone as hereinbefore appears but not in any respect as the Solicitor for or on behalf of the Defendant Home The costs for the same were at the time debited to the Plaintiff alone in my bill but they have not yet been paid Save as appears from the Plaintiff's statements and letters to the contrary and the Defendant's denial of her present allegations I am unable to set forth as to my belief or otherwise whether the said deed was executed by the Plaintiff at the request or instigation or suggestion or desire of the said Defendant Home or whether or not while if she was in fact ever under the influence of the ascendancy or power which the Plaintiff now alleges he had acquired over her as in the said Bill mentioned and I refer to the circumstances hereinbefore related in the 8th to the 12th paragraphs both inclusive and the 61st and 62nd paragraphs of this my answer I repeatedly and strongly urged her to employ another Solicitor which she refused to do as hereinbefore truly appears And under the circumstances hereinbefore appearing and not otherwise it is the fact that she executed the said deed without the intervention of any other Solicitor or person as far as I know on her behalf I acted as her Solicitor and with entire independence of the Defendant Home from whom I neither did receive nor would I have received any instructions whatever on the subject.

88. I have hereinbefore and respectively in paragraphs 7 to 41 both inclusive and paragraphs 63 and 64 of this my Answer truthfully set forth the facts and correspondence relating to the indenture of the 19th January 1867

Digitized by Microsoft®

in the Plaintiff's Bill mentioned and save as hereinbefore appears and from the Plaintiff's former denial as aforesaid and the other Defendants' denial of her present statements I am unable to set forth as to my belief or otherwise whether or not the Plaintiff in the month of January 1867 or at some other or what time was induced by the Defendant Home to execute a deed or whether or not purporting to be an indenture bearing date the 19th January 1867 or made between the parties or of or to the purport and effect in the 13th paragraph of the said Bill set forth (so far as the same is therein set forth or some other or what indenture of such or some other or what date or made between the same or some other or what parties or of or to such or the like or some other or what purport or effect or how otherwise.

89. Under the circumstances hereinbefore appearing and not otherwise the said indenture of the 19th January 1867 was prepared by me as the Solicitor for and on behalf of the Plaintiff and in no respect as the Solicitor for or on behalf of the Defendant Home The costs for preparing the same were at the time duly debited to the Plaintiff alone in my bill but such costs have not yet been paid I repeatedly and strongly urged her to employ another Solicitor which she refused to do as hereinbefore truly appears and under the circumstances herein appearing and not otherwise it is the fact that the said deed was not as far as I know seen or approved of by any other Solicitor or person for or on behalf of the Plaintiff I acted as her Solicitor and with entire independence of the Defendant Home as hereinbefore truly appears and I did not receive nor would I have received any instructions from him in the matter. The Plaintiff also executed the indenture of even date recited in the said last-mentioned indenture whereby she assigned the principal sum of £30,000 and interest and the securities for the same to me. Such indenture of even date was prepared by me as the Solicitor for and on behalf of the Plaintiff alone and in no respect

Digitized by Microsoft®

as the Soliciter for or on behalf of the Defendant Home and under the circumstances hereinbefore appearing and not otherwise The same indenture was not as far as I know seen or approved of by any other Solicitor or person for or on behalf of the Plaintiff I acted as her Solicitor and with entire independence of the Defendant Home as hereinbefore truly appears and I did not receive nor would I have received any instructions from him in the matter And save from the Plaintiff's former denial as aforesaid and from the other Defendant's denial of her present statements I am unable to set forth as to my belief or otherwise whether the Plaintiff executed the two last mentioned indentures at the request or instigation of the Defendant Home or whether or not while she was if she in fact was under the influence of the ascendancy or power over her mind which the Plaintiff now alleges the said last named Defendant had acquired by means or under the circumstances in the said Bill mentioned. The said two last mentioned deeds were executed by the Plaintiff on Saturday the 19th January 1867 at her own house in the presence of my son and Mr. Hartley two of my clerks who attended with the deeds for the purpose I was not there being ill at home and I afterwards executed the deed myself at my office in the presence of the same witnesses.

90. I have hereinbefore in paragraphs 38, 39, 40 and 64 of this my Answer truthfully set forth the circumstances relating to the transfer of £2,290 9*s.* 5*d.* or thereabouts Bank £3 per Cent. Consolidated Annuities And save as therein appears and save from the Plaintiff's former denials as aforesaid and from the other Defendant's denial of her present statements I am unable to set forth as to my belief or otherwise whether the Plaintiff on the 21st February 1867 or at any other or what time was or whether or not again induced by the Defendant Home to accompany him to the Bank of England or whether or not to transfer the sum of £2,290 9*s.* 5*d.* or some other or what sum of Bank £3

Digitized by Microsoft®

per Cent. Consolidated Annuities into his name as Daniel Dunglass Home though I believe that was the name in which the large sums of like annuities was standing the first and largest sums having been invested prior to his change of name or whether or not the last mentioned transfer was or whether or not also made by the Plaintiff while under if she ever was under the influence of the ascendancy or power which the Plaintiff now alleges the said Defendant had by the means in the said Bill mentioned or in fact so acquired or was then exercising over her mind or how otherwise.

91. The Defendant Home did on or about the 13th March 1867 sell out a sum of £21,947 17*s.* 6*d.* Bank £3 per Cent. Consolidated Annuities which was I believe part of the said sum of £26,756 15*s.* 5*d.* like annuities and of the said sum of £6,798 17*s.* 4*d.* and £2,290 9*s.* 5*d.* like annuities On behalf of the said Defendant and at his request he being then ill at Hastings I received the proceeds of such sale amounting to the sum of £20,000 cash from the brokers and the Defendant Home on or about the date last aforesaid lent and advanced the said sum of £20,000 through me upon mortgage of property in Yorkshire and such sum of £20,000 has ever since been and is now invested on the security of the said mortgage The said security has since been and is now deposited in this Court where the Plaintiff can inspect it No part of the said sum so lent and advanced has been repaid As regards the said advance of £20,000 upon mortgage I refer to the 65th paragraph of this my Answer.

92. I am unable to set forth as to my belief or otherwise whether a sum of £13,898 4*s.* 8*d.* Bank £3 per Cent. Consolidated Annuities or any other or what sum of such annuities but I believe that the residue of the balance of the said three sums of £26,756 15*s.* 5*d.* £6,798 17*s.* 4*d.* and £2,290 9*s.* 5*d.* like annuities after deducting from the aggregate amount thereof the said sum of £21,947 17*s.* 6*d.* sold out as hereinbefore mentioned is still standing

Digitized by Microsoft®

in the name of the Defendant as Daniel Dunglass Home the first and largest amount having been paid into that name before the said Defendant changed his name at the request of the Plaintiff and the subsequent additions having been made to the same account in the Books of the Governor and Company of the Bank of England I am unable to set forth whether the said last-named Defendant threatens but I believe that he intends to sell and dispose thereof or deal therewith as and when he thinks proper as belonging to him.

93. I refer to the 52nd and 53rd paragraph of this my Answer and I am ready and willing to do in the premises whatever this Honourable Court shall think proper to direct upon having my reasonable costs paid and satisfied I claim a lien on all deeds and documents in my possession or which I have deposited in this Court for the purposes of this suit or otherwise which may belong to the Plaintiff or in which she is interested for all costs due to me as her solicitor.

94. After my Answer was prepared and printed to this point I have received and read the print of the Plaintiff's Affidavit sworn and filed on the 18th July instant It is entirely untrue as stated in the 6th paragraph of that Affidavit that the Plaintiff ever informed me that she was obeying the dictates of her husband's spirit Had she said so or had I known of it I should at once have refused to proceed with the business It is also untrue as stated in the 7th paragraph that I was ever present when any instructions were received from her husband's spirit with reference to the said deeds The only occasion on which I saw any phenomena in her presence was one evening after I had taken my hat to leave she asked me to remain a few minutes which I did and there were some movements of the table and rapping but there were no directions nor instructions relating to the said deeds It is untrue that the deed of the 12th of December last was signed on any other day than that of its date It was

Digitized by Microsoft®

seen the next day executed by the Plaintiff by several of my clerks It is also untrue as stated in the 9th paragraph of her Affidavit that she told me on the occasion therein referred to that she did not care for the Defendant Home personally nor that she was obeying the orders of her husband's spirit in what she had done or wished to do I was very unwell on that day and have no distinct memory of her conversation had she told me so I would have had nothing further to do with the business She always expressed to me her great affection for the Defendant Home I find the following paragraph in one of her letters to him bearing out this under her own hand one of which is as follows "I feel so anxious on your account and afraid you should be ill, or anything should happen to you, that I am sure it is a mother's maternal love towards her beloved child, so if you *value* my *comfort* my dear son take care of yourself." She several times told me that her only fear was that the Defendant Home would marry and that she would lose his society It would be doing the greatest injustice to the Plaintiff could I believe that she is now expressing the truth in stating that she did not love the Defendant.

END OF VOL. II.

Digitized by Microsoft®

In every library, public or private, one of the first necessities is a standard work on Literature. The critics unite in giving the first place to

TAINE'S ENGLISH LITERATURE.

THE NATION *says:* "It is the best history of English literature that has yet been produced."

THE LONDON SPECTATOR *says:* "No English book can bear comparison with it for richness of thought, for variety, keenness, and soundness of critical judgment, for the brilliancy with which the material and the moral features of each age are sketched."

THE N. Y. TRIBUNE *says:* "It is no less extraordinary in its style than original in its intention. It is a new phenomenon in English letters. It occupies a unique place in the language. The works of Warton, Johnson, Hallam, and other eminent writers on the literary history of England have as little with it in common as a museum of stuffed animals with a forest of singing-birds and sportful quadrupeds."

THE N. Y. WORLD *says:* "It is the only real history of the literature of our mother-tongue."

THE N. Y. EVENING POST *says:* "No history of our own literature, equally learned, honest, and entertaining, has ever been written."

SCRIBNER'S MONTHLY *says:* "There can nowhere else be found a survey of English Literature so comprehensive, so accurate, and always so brilliant."

THE GALAXY *says:* "A mine of thought as well as a perfect gallery of literary pictures of men and societies. No cultivated person can dispense with reading it."

REV. HENRY WARD BEECHER, *in the* CHRISTIAN UNION, *says:* "This work ought to be not only in all public libraries, but in every house of culture throughout the land."

Mr. GEORGE WM. CURTIS *says:* "The delicate and sympathetic insight, the mastery of the subject, and the vivid and picturesque style—unparalleled in such a work—seem to me equally remarkable."

Mr. BAYARD TAYLOR *says:* "I consider it the best history of English Literature in existence."

Mr. WM. CULLEN BRYANT *says:* "I concur fully with the favorable opinion expressed concerning it by Mr. Taylor."

Digitized by Microsoft®

REV. DR. PRIME, *in the* N. Y. OBSERVER, *says:* "It is a wonderful work. It shows a power of analysis, and a vivid delineation of scenes in past ages, which are almost unequalled in the range of historical literature."

PROF. P. R. LOUNSBERY, OF YALE COLLEGE, *says:* "I wish it could be introduced into every household."

PROF. L. CLARK SEELYE, OF AMHERST COLLEGE, *says:* "It is the best History of English Literature that has been written. Every educated man ought to read it."

PROF. MOSES COIT TYLER, OF THE UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN, *says:* "It forms an intellectual era in a man's life to make the acquaintance of Taine—especially of his masterful and inspiring work on English Literature. Of that marvellous book, it must be said that it is henceforth simply indispensable to the students of our Literature."

THE BOSTON ADVERTISER *says:* "This grand work has a glory of its own, which culture and taste will not fail to discover."

THE BOSTON POST *says:* "It is the most readable history of English literature that has ever been written."

THE SPRINGFIELD REPUBLICAN *says:* "It is the portrait of the English people from the days of Hengist and Horsa to those of Gladstone and D'Israeli—a masterly work."

THE NEW ORLEANS TIMES *says:* "It is really a history of the English people—a present face to face account with the race standing before you. Taine has the dramatic power of Charles Reade, with the boldness and brilliancy of Carlyle. In his hands history is made as attractive as a romance."

THE METHODIST *says:* "No well-furnished library can be without these volumes. Beyond question, it is the *very best* history of English literature."

THE LIBERAL CHRISTIAN *says:* "We recommend it to all serious readers and thinkers as equally instructive and charming."

TAINE'S ENGLISH LITERATURE.

Complete in Two Volumes octavo.

Cloth, $10; Half Calf or Half Morocco, $15.

HOLT & WILLIAMS, PUBLISHERS,

25 Bond Street, New York.

Digitized by Microsoft®